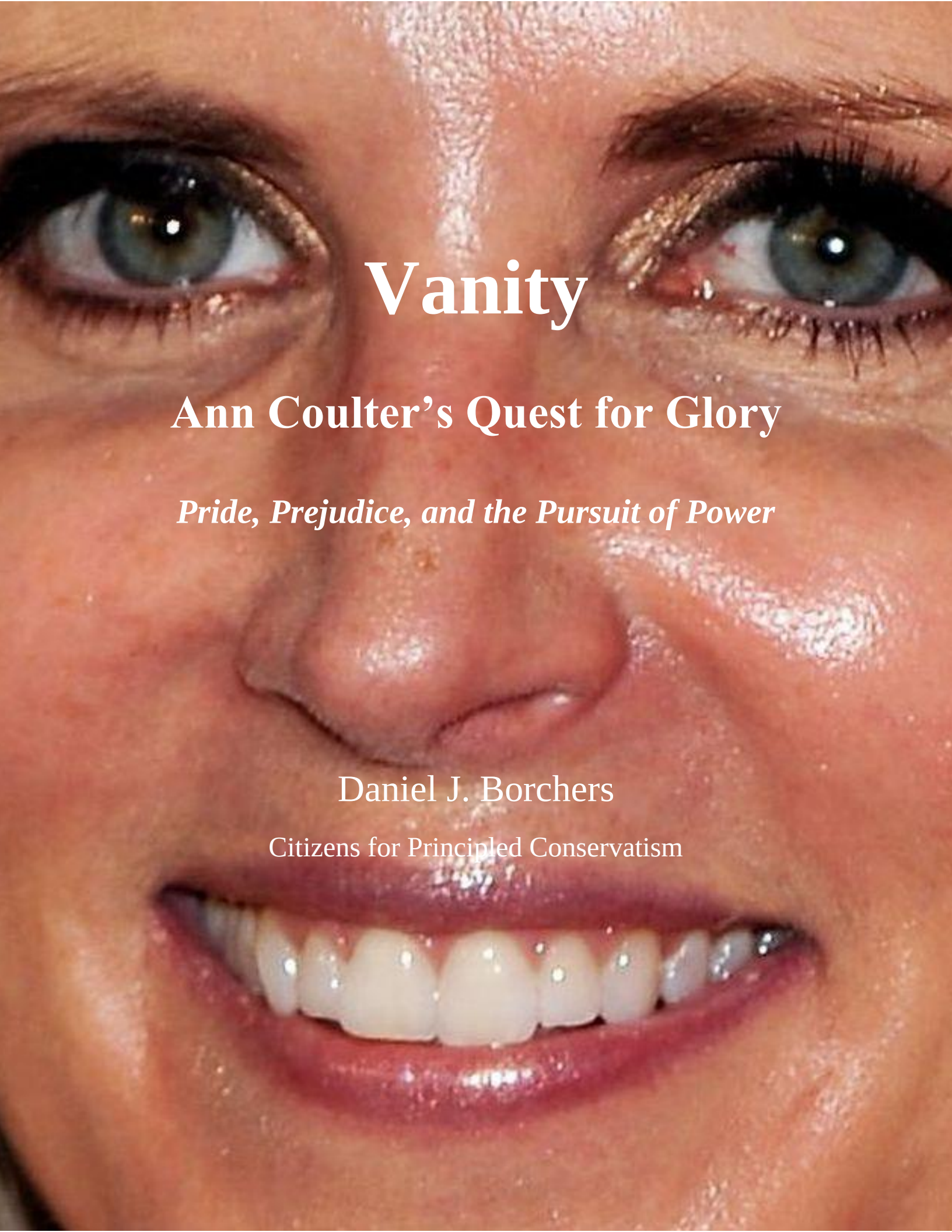
Vanity

Ann Coulter's Quest for Glory

Pride, Prejudice, and the Pursuit of Power

DANIEL J. BORCHERS



Vanity

Ann Coulter's Quest for Glory

Pride, Prejudice, and the Pursuit of Power

Daniel J. Borchers

Citizens for Principled Conservatism

Vanity: Ann Coulter's Quest for Glory

First printing: December 31, 2012

Front and back cover design: *Daniel Borchers*
Front cover photo is courtesy of *George* magazine with cover **design** by *Daniel Borchers*.

All other photos obtained from the Internet and other open sources.

Published by Citizens for Principled Conservatism.

Printed in the United States of America.

Daniel Borchers, President
Citizens for Principled Conservatism
P.O. Box 506
Odenton, MD 21113
www.CoulterWatch.com
CoulterWatch@yahoo.com
240-476-9690

"He who glories,
let him glory in the Lord."

– 1st Corinthians 1:31

Table of Contents

"You should consider that Imitation is the most acceptable part of Worship, and that the Gods had much rather Mankind should Resemble, than Flatter them." – Marcus Aurelius

"'Unity through diversity' expresses my belief about the body of Christ."
– Katherine Black

"I'm on the edge of glory, and I'm hanging on a moment of truth."
– Lady Gaga

Preface

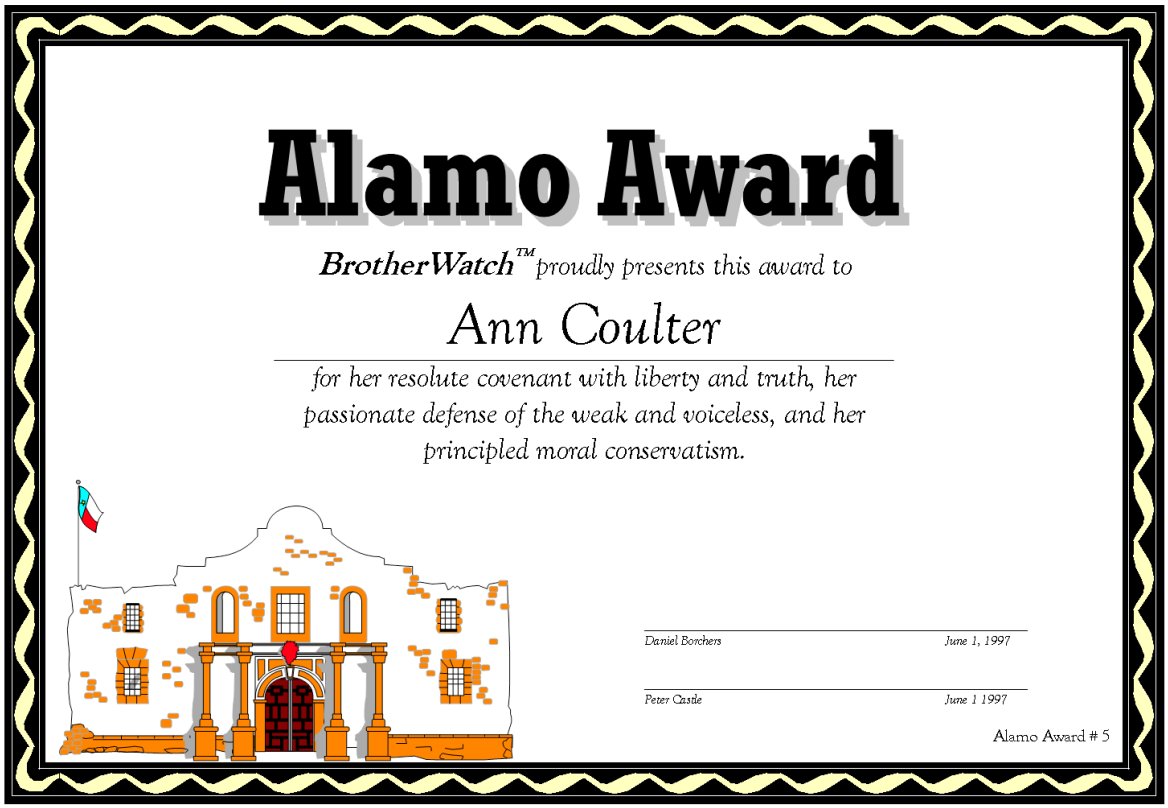
Image Obsessed

"Vanity of vanities, all is vanity." – *Ecclesiastes 1:2*

American Freedom Fighter

"Is Dan still here?" Ann anxiously asked the receptionist as she rushed into the reception area.

I was there to present her with her award as a courageous American freedom-fighter and she was eager to receive it. In retrospect, her query – "Is Dan *still* here?" – suggested some measure of uncertainty, a degree of insecurity, as if the person giving her the award would not wait even a few minutes for her to arrive.[1]

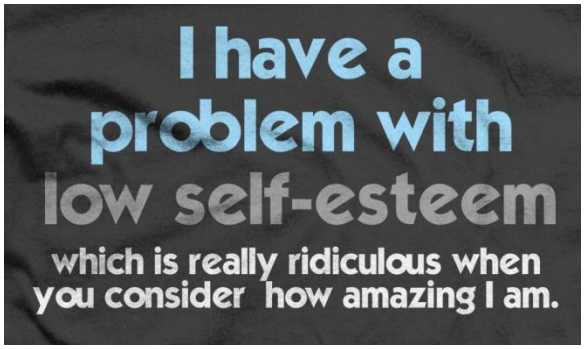


As Ann gave me a quick tour of the Center for Individual Rights, and in particular the view from her boss's corner office on Connecticut Avenue, I sensed that she wanted to impress me (even though I was obviously already impressed enough with her to give her an award).

[1] See Chapter 2 ("The Cuckolding of Conscience"), in my free PDF book, *The Beauty of Conservatism: The Seduction of Ann Coulter and the Cuckolding of Conscience*, at www.CoulterWatch.com/beauty.pdf.

Two weeks later, Ann sent me several multi-page emails urging me to aid her by writing letters-to-the-editor on her behalf to *George* magazine, *TV Guide*, and the *New York Times*. Ann was distraught over how she was portrayed in those publications, incensed over minor issues, and very concerned about her image. She wanted me to correct what she perceived as mischaracterizations of her in those publications.

As she told me, "it's a good idea that someone besides Ann writes a letter because otherwise it'll just appear self-serving." Ann later thanked me for writing the letters, explaining that "a letter would be good to put my name in that magazine another week," adding, "I was tempted to write a letter myself for this purpose, but thought it would be hard to do without sounding defensive and pathetic, no matter how short and sarcastic."[2]



It was quickly impressed upon me that Ann was passionate about, even obsessed with, her image.[3] I would soon discover that Ann would scour the media for references to herself and would shoot off emails to counter anything of which she disapproved. That pattern still continues to some degree today with Coulter either directly defending herself or, more often, enlisting the aid of surrogates within her network of friends and colleagues to do so for her.

Returning to 1997, within a few short months, Coulter's public demeanor and personal conduct would radically change.[4] Indeed, she would come to embody character traits and behaviors which she claims to abhor, ones contrary to those cited in her award.

Mugged – First Impressions

Now, 15 years after first meeting Ann, I am again confronted with ambivalence in the person and persona of Coulter, who remains brilliant and a phenomenal wordsmith, but who seems to struggle as a narcissist with self-doubt, and who remains questionable (actually, untrustworthy) in the areas of credibility and character.[5]

Over the intervening years, several truths have emerged concerning Coulter: her brilliance, narcissism, and insecurity, and an insecurity which has been parlayed into playing both a heroine and a victim.[6] (In order to cope with her own insecurities and self-doubts, Coulter fabricates victimization to deflect all criticisms away from their truth.)

My initial one-word evaluation of *Mugged* was "exemplary," despite some obvious problems addressed later in this book. I wanted to believe that Coulter is a better person than many have found her to be (or that she was becoming a better person than she used to be). Looking for proof, I found it (of sorts).

---

2 Even then, in 1997, Coulter valued sarcasm as a primary means of conveying her thoughts (and emotions).

3 See Chapter 4 ("… Brains …") and Appendix 2 ("The Wisdom of Godliness"), in my free PDF book, *The Beauty of Conservatism: The Seduction of Ann Coulter and the Cuckolding of Conscience*, at www.CoulterWatch.com/beauty.pdf.

4 See Chapter 2 ("The Cuckolding of Conscience"), in my free PDF book, *The Beauty of Conservatism: The Seduction of Ann Coulter and the Cuckolding of Conscience*, at www.CoulterWatch.com/beauty.pdf.

5 Cleverness can masquerade as brilliance. Over the years, a growing number of people have observed a shallowness and superficiality in Coulter's thinking. Most recently, Ilana Mercer wrote, "Ms. Coulter is **very bright**. Brilliant in many ways. But she's not a deep thinker. I think she's a solid writer and has a quick mind. I've always liked her b/c of those qualities …" (see Ilana Mercer, "Ann Coulter Disses Barry Goldwater's Commitment to Private Property," Barely a Blog, 11/11/12, http://barelyablog.com/ann-coulter-disses-barry-goldwaters-devotion-to-private-property/).

6 See Chapter 5 ("… and Balls!") and Chapter 6 ("I Am Victim, Hear Me Whine"), in my free PDF book, *The Beauty of Conservatism: The Seduction of Ann Coulter and the Cuckolding of Conscience*, at www.CoulterWatch.com/beauty.pdf.

Though judging it exemplary, sadly, I must add caveats, disclaimers, and qualifications to my statement. (For you diehard Ann Coulter fans, more on that in a moment.)

Let's begin with the good. Coulter's analysis, conclusions, and writing are dazzling.[7] Written in a captivating fashion, *Mugged* is certainly a worthy read. It's narrative is smooth, easy flowing, and easy to grasp. I, for one, find Coulter's parenthetical asides persuasively humorous and remarkably restrained. For me, the most hopeful aspect of *Mugged* from that perspective is Coulter's positive employment of parenthetical statements. Almost uniformly, they are humorous, pertinent, and *non*-polemical.

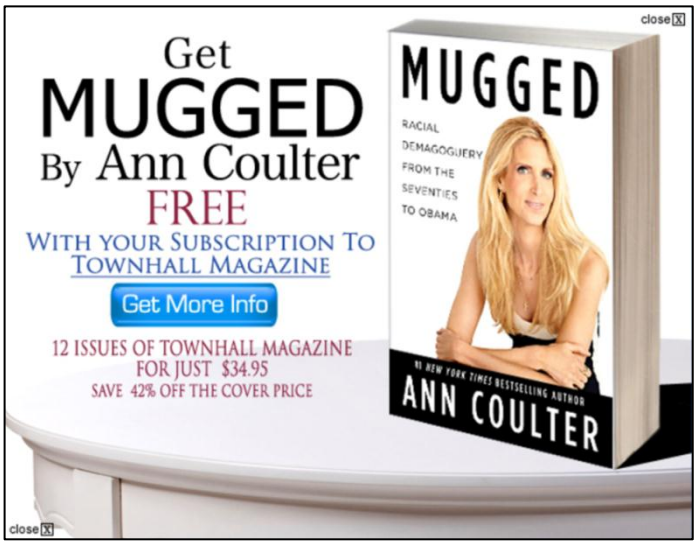
Indeed, if it weren't for the few criticisms expressed in *Vanity*, I could wholeheartedly recommend *Mugged*. If anything, her humor has significantly improved, being funny and/or pointed but non-derogatory. This quickly-written book (three-four months in the spring/summer) suggests a fair degree of spiritual and emotional growth.

Mugged – Second Thoughts

While reading *Mugged*, I was delighted with the writing and the content. It flowed beautifully for perhaps the first fifty pages, which contained just a few questionable word choices. As the book progressed, the word choices became more questionable and much more frequent.

Unfortunately, Coulter can't seem to shake her tendency to employ elimination rhetoric and hate speech. Though not as prominently featured as in some of her other books, she continues to harbor hatred – and actually maintains virulent vendettas against a slew of people – in *Mugged*.[8]

Surprisingly, Coulter's book is such a good read that it's easy to overlook the flawed fundamental premise upon which it is based. To my knowledge, conservatives have missed it – even constitutional attorneys and the much-vaunted Federalist Society. (See chapter 4, "Prejudice," for details.)



I have frequently expressed admiration for Coulter's intellect. She has a quick and agile mind, voluminous vocabulary, excellent memory, quick wit, and is able to connect concepts and events with extraordinary ease.

However, Coulter wears moral and intellectual blinders, having her senses dulled through years of compromise in her quest for glory. As noted in my previous books, Coulter engages in ***cognitive* dissonance** (for instance, claiming that Muslim extremists are just primitive savages yet they are the only ones capable of succeeding in an attack like 9/11) and **addictive *thinking*** (denial, projection, and rationalization of her own wrong thoughts, attitudes, emotions, and behaviors). Cognitive, thinking – these have to do with the intellect (although there are certainly moral components).

---

[7] Though her ideas are not "new," but largely reflective of what conservatives have known for decades, she has packaged the various pieces of the puzzle in an entertaining and enlightening way. The broad strokes of the portrait she has painted are accurate, but I have not fact-checked every single detail, or brush stroke, she has made.

[8] Also, as with her previous books, Coulter deals with absurd generalities, suggesting that *all* racists are liberals and *no* conservatives are racist. Those types of assertions have been addressed in my earlier books on Coulter.

Moreover, her promotion of *Mugged* is supercharged with **ego**! Coulter praised her own book even before its publication:

- "it's a bombshell before the election!"[9]
- "smash book out this October!"[10]
- "you won't be able to put it down!"[11]
- "IT'S SO GOOD!!!!!!!!!!!!!! it's a blockbuster."[12]
- "It's *soooo* good!"[13]

Courage – Then, and Now

In the fall of 1996, Coulter courageously confronted civil rights icon Jesse Jackson on MSNBC, at risk of losing her job (she told me was almost fired for it). Hence my Alamo Award to her the following summer.

In 2012, Coulter again confronted civil rights charlatans and race hucksters in her compelling book, *Mugged*, but perhaps not so courageously. After all, as she writes in *Mugged*, "It's apparently hard for some people to grasp that it's not brave to tell an audience what it already believes."[14] Conservatives certainly believe the main thesis of this book, as do her employers at *Human Events*, her speech sponsors at Young America's Foundation, the Claire Boothe Luce Policy Institute, and College Republicans, the hosts of the various Fox News talk shows she frequents, and the various other organizations promoting her books, like *Townhall*, *World Net Daily*, and *Newsmax*.


Why is the media pretending Ann Coulter's new book Mugged doesn't exist? — Listen LIVE at 1030pm CST

Posted on October 10, 2012 by Kevin DuJan // Hillbuzz Radio, Multimedia

What: The HillBuzz & Mrs. Fox Show

When: 1030pm CST, 10/10/2012

How to listen: CLICK HERE for the live stream and then click HERE for the archive version later

Tonight Megan Fox and I will be talking about Ann Coulter's new book, *Mugged*, and why the corrupt media is embargoing all talk about it.

What are they scared of?

What don't they want you to know about?

In her office in 1997, Coulter desired the accolade I was to give her even as she felt insecure enough to fear that I would not wait for her. Similarly, in 2012 Coulter's ego proclaimed her book a smash hit even before publication, yet she feared that perhaps it wouldn't be a best-seller, thus prompting her to claim a conspiracy of censorship by the media as an excuse.[15] Coulter was already preparing for the worst even as she was claiming it to be her best.

In 1997, my admiration for Coulter turned to disillusionment. With *Mugged*, one must admire Coulter's intellect and masterful linguistic skills. However, her rhetorical excesses, though abated in her book, remain in her commentary. Further, her tendency toward enmity and elimination rhetoric – as well as prevarication – negate the many positive features in her book.

The question remains: How can someone write such an exemplary and godly book (with the aforementioned qualifications), yet behave in such an ungodly fashion? From whence arise these contradictions in the life and work of Ann Coulter? *Vanity* is my latest attempt to provide answers.

---

9 Ann Coulter tweet, 5/10/12.

10 Ann Coulter tweet, 5/10/12.

11 Ann Coulter tweet, 5/15/12.

12 Katie Pavlich, "Ann Coulter Takes on Obama's Racial Demagoguery in Mugged," *Townhall*, 7/10/12, http://townhall.com/tipsheet/katiepavlich/2012/07/10/exclusive_ann_coulter_takes_on_obamas_racial_demagoguery_in_mugged.

13 Ann Coulter, *Hannity*, FNC, 8/2/12.

14 Ann Coulter, *Mugged: Racial Demagoguery from the Seventies to Obama*, Sentinel, pg. 108.

15 Ann Coulter, *Sean Hannity Radio Show*, Premiere Radio Networks, 9/24/12. With all the interviews and promotion on all those Fox News programs and radio interviews across the country, and book giveaways for magazine subscriptions to *Townhall*, *Human Events*, and other publications, one wonders from where Coulter's insecurities originate.

Introduction

Object of Adoration

"The only thing worse than people talking about you is people not talking about you." – *Oscar Wilde*

Books on Coulter

Vanity is the third in my series of books about Ann Coulter. The first, *The Beauty of Conservatism*, examines the merits of Coulter's self-identity as possessing beauty, intelligence, and courage. The Conservative Movement has myopically accepted her self-promotion as the epitome of Conservatism – effectively defining Conservatism down – even as it champions a hypocrite who engages in the politics of personal destruction, prevarication, hate speech, and elimination rhetoric.

My second book, *The Gospel According to Ann Coulter*, examines the roots and fruit of Coulter's unique syncretic blend of theology and ideology and its consequences for Conservatism and Christianity. Coulter's self-identity as a model Christian and quintessential conservative is again at odds with the teachings of Christ and the apostolic church, distorts the image of Christians and their Creator, and emboldens saints to become sinners. Coulter has created her own heresy – Coulterism – which recognizes the centrality of the cross but denies the power of the resurrected life.[1]

The working title for this book was originally *Ego: Looking Into the Mirror of Ann Coulter's Soul*. It quickly became apparent that that focus would be too narrow, too constricted, thus prompting the present title.[2]

EGO stands for **E**dging **G**od **O**ut. The EGO is a collection of ideas that we carry around to make ourselves feel important. Those ideas are:

1. I am what I have (things, objects, money)
2. I am what I do (my job, title, accomplishments)
3. I am what other people think of me (my reputation)
4. I'm separate from everybody else (I'm special, I'm different)
5. I'm separate from what is missing in my life
6. I am separate from God

– http://skinnyfrommckinney.com/check-your-ego/.

Coulter Conundrums

From the beginning of her media career, contradictions and conundrums materialized in Coulter's life and work. Driven to succeed – to become the very best, or at least be *regarded* as the very best – created a craving within Coulter which could only be satiated by praise and adulation.

"Coulter, nevertheless, seems to crave media attention."[3] Mary Jacoby's observation in *Capital Style* looked deeply into Coulter's soul. Coulter certainly craves attention and surely seeks out her own glory. Her striving for success has been duly noted by her colleagues, friends, and foes.

But to achieve her goals, Coulter had to compromise on her principles, thus distorting (or revealing) her character. Coulter's contradictions and conundrums have been ever present in the public eye. A pro-

1 See 2nd Timothy 3:5, Romans 12:2, 21, and Romans 6:8.
2 The theme of mirrors of the soul is covered in Chapter 9: "Conscience and Innocence."
3 Mary Jacoby, "The Pundettes," *Capital Style*, December 1997, pg. 44.

family values conservative who revels in her "total slutty look." An integrity-seeking Christian demanding honesty from others who is well known for fabricating lies of her own.

Having discerned the inconsistencies, contradictions, and conundrums in Coulter's life, I asked a colleague of hers about this "mass of contradictions" in her life. This colleague saw those contradictions *linked* to her desire for fame: "Part of it has to do with *being* a celebrity, but part of it has to do with being the kind of person who *so wants* to be a celebrity."[4]

Coulter's mass of contradictions was perfectly illustrated in a *Washington Post* profile of her which began, "The woman on the bar stool – long blond hair, short black skirt, spiky heels, chain-smoking Carltons – looks like she's waiting to be picked up."[5] In that piece, Coulter claimed, "I'm not [selling sex], [my publishers] are." Just the following spring, as a new essayist for *George* magazine, Coulter posed on a "bar stool" wearing a "short black skirt," looking like she's "waiting to be picked up."

Structure of *Vanity*

The structure of *Vanity* is simple. Chapter one lays the foundation – narcissism – as not just a human proclivity but as an overwhelming operating psychological principle in Coulter's life. As documented elsewhere, the psychological formula which appears to have created the Ann Coulter so many love and so many hate is …

Beauty + Brains + Background → Narcissism.[6]

Chapter two shows how narcissism can lead to and become idol worship, with the narcissist becoming the object of idolatry for both the narcissist and her devotees. Chapters three through five address the psychological triplets of pride, prejudice, and power, all of which reinforce narcissism. Chapters six and seven examine the twins of fame and fortune, which similarly reinforce and intensify narcissistic patterns of thinking and behavior. Combined, these factors and forces all create a synergistic cycle which can seem unbreakable, as represented in the following formula:

Pride → Prejudice → Pursuit of Power → Fame → Fortune → Pride → …

---

4 Author interview.

5 Howard Kurtz, "The Blonde Flinging Bombshells at Clinton," *Washington Post*, October 16, 1998. See http://www.washingtonpsot.com/wp-srv/politics/special/stories/coulter101698.htm.

6 There are certainly many people who are attractive, articulate, intelligent, and have a distinguished background but who are not elf-absorbed and do not seek self-glory. However, the factors identified in my first two books have certainly significantly impacted Coulter emotionally, psychologically, and spiritually.

Chapter eight gazes into the mirror of Ann Coulter's soul by examining perhaps the most revelatory essays a person can write: her eulogies to family, friends, and colleagues. In many of those eulogies, Coulter is literally the center of attention.

Chapter nine delves into the nature of conscience and innocence; the former can put a brake on narcissism and its devastating consequences while the latter is a state to which narcissists can return with repentance and healing.

Afterwards, seven case studies in narcissism are provided. They reveal various ways in which Coulter has, through treachery and deceit, attempted to subvert the electoral process to achieve her desired electoral outcome, all the while elevating herself, her goals, and her desires for glory.

Those case studies, chronologically presented, include Coulter's betrayal of her client (Paula Jones), her illegal possession of (and perhaps contamination of) evidence in a case involving President Clinton (the "Tripp tapes"), her attempt to run a "total sham campaign" for Congress to oust a sitting Republican, and her attempts to subvert the presidential election process in the 2000, 2008, and 2012 election cycles.

We conclude with three appendices. The first features Coulter impersonators, the second is an interview with Katherine Black, author of her own book about Coulter. My sermon, "The Success of the Godly," in Appendix 3, completes this book.


I Hate Ann Coulter

Ann Coulter Is A Conservative Fraud And Christian Wolf

By: KnightsLife
Written on June 27th, 2012

Two recent books expose Coulter as a conserative fraud and a "Christian" wolf preying on the sheep. The first book questions whether she is really "The Beauty of Conservatism" at www.CoulterWatch.com/beauty.pdf while the second one analyzes her ideology and theology in "The Gospel According to Ann Coulter" at www.CoulterWatch.com/gospel.pdf.

By: KnightsLife
Age: 41-45,

Chapter 1

Rising Crème: Narcissism – A Primer

"I'm against homogenizers in art, in politics, in every walk of life.
I want the cream to rise." – *Ann Coulter*

The Narcissism of Ann Coulter

Ann Coulter epitomizes narcissism. She has been both favorably and unfavorably compared to Britney Spears, Paris Hilton, Lady Gaga, and Madonna (not the Virgin). Coulter's ascendancy to celebrity and her longevity as a sensationalist who nonetheless is somehow taken seriously attest to the demise of Western Civilization as we once knew it.[1]

The Rev. Anne Robertson, Executive Director of the Massachusetts Bible Society, believes "Ann Coulter certainly could be the poster child for narcissism."[2] She adds, "And she'd probably be fine with that," noting that "As long as Ann Coulter is front and center, it matters not what puts her there or who might either benefit or suffer as a result of her words." A close friend of mine, himself a narcissism sufferer, indisputably affirms Coulter's affliction as a narcissist.[3] Author and TV host Greg Gutfeld once called Alec Baldwin an "ego glutton,"[4] a term certainly apropos of his close friend, Coulter.

While Coulter condemns college course like "'Lady Gaga and the Sociology of Fame' (University of South Carolina, Columbia), 'GaGa for Gaga: Sex, Gender and Identity' (University of Virginia),"[5] she studiously avoiding comparisons of herself to Gaga. One blogger observed:

> This is just for a starter. If anything, she functions more like a destroyer rather than a defender of conservative values. Her extreme approach and machine-gun style attack do not encourage people to take her seriously. If people don't take her seriously, what's the point of her making noises, other than Lady Gaga type of attracting attention? Except this is not performance.[6]

---

1 As Coulter can attest, I am using a literary device known as hyperbole.
2 See Anne Robertson, http://www.annerobertson.com/Podcasts/Devotionstext/SpiritWalkers82.htm.
3 Author interview.
4 Greg Gutfeld, *The Five*, FNC, 6/21/12.
5 Ann Coulter, "The Problem With Santorum," 2/29/12, http://www.anncoulter.com/columns/2012-02-29.html.
6 Yanwen Xia, "Ann Coulter and Lady Gaga," KansasCity.com, 2/24/12, http://voices.kansascity.com/entries/ann-coulter-and-lady-gaga/.

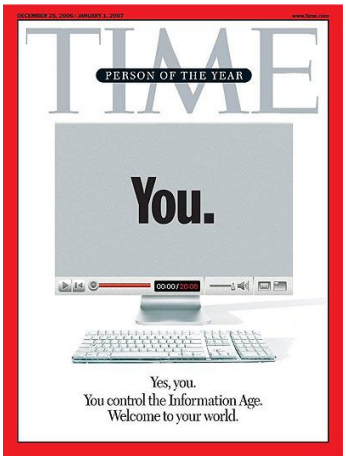
And attract attention she does. Given a dozen different ways of saying the same thing, Coulter will choose the most controversial and provocative. She doesn't call herself a controversialist and provocateur for nothing. In 2007, a blogger declared Coulter "The Paris Hilton of Conservative Politics."[7] Another blogger noted:

> It occurs to me that Ann Coulter and Paris Hilton have a lot in common. Both are blond, relatively good-looking and delight in media attention. Only Ann Coulter is a pretty smart woman and can write (& speak) well. And she seems to be using her talents to accomplish what Miss Hilton does just by living her life — to promote herself.[8]

Self-promotion is where it's at these days. Self-promotion sells. At least the kind in which Coulter engages. Cliff Kincaid of Accuracy in Media stated the obvious about Coulter's then most recent controversy: "The political equivalent of Britney Spears shaving the hair off her head, Ann Coulter made headlines at this year's Conservative Political Action Conference (CPAC) by calling Democrat John Edwards a faggot." Kincaid then connected the incongruity of Coulter's behavior, her attire, and her espoused Christian beliefs: "Wearing a leather dress and a Christian cross around her neck, Coulter must be a liberal infiltrator whose purpose is to give conservatism a bad name."[9]

Coulter's renown for seeking (and receiving) renown is reflective of a degenerating and degenerate American culture.

Narcissism in American Culture



By many measures, America is beset by a narcissistic culture. Beginning with the Sixties' Me Generation, America's cultural ethos began to radically change (a fundamental change radically accelerating during the Age of Obama). Since the momentous societal zeitgeist of the Sixties, many cultural dysfunctions have arisen, including the development of an ever-expanding entitlement mentality, a seemingly endless expansion of victimology, and a self-esteem movement which has yet to reach its zenith.

In an essay entitled, "The United States of Narcissism," author Daniel Altman reviews a 2010 book, *The Narcissism Epidemic*, which "find the origins of self-obsession in the 1960s, when people began to cast off societal constraints and expectations in favor of exploring their own human potential."[10]

---

7 See http://www.prosebeforehos.com/government_employee/03/06/ann-coulter-is-the-paris-hilton-of-conservative-politics/. See also http://www.marketwatch.com/story/ann-coulter-is-the-paris-hilton-of-political-coverage, http://www.jennyjerrome.us/pg_b_071005.html, http://anncoulter.conservativeblogs.us/2011/04/26/paris-hilton-and-the-negative-impacts-of-narcissism/, http://pettifoggers.blogspot.com/2007/03/ann-coulterthe-paris-hilton-of-punditry.html

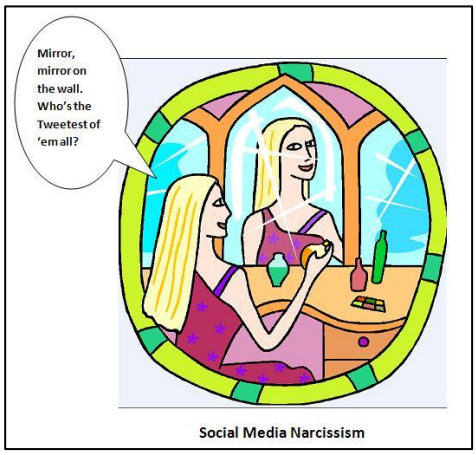
8 GayPatriotWest, "Is Ann Coulter Paris Hilton With Brains?" Gay Patriot, 6/8/07, http://www.gaypatriot.net/2007/06/08/is-ann-coulter-paris-hilton-with-brains/. See also Paul Soglin, "Paris Hilton and Ann Coulter: Expert Commentary," *Waxing America*, 6/29/07, http://www.waxingamerica.com/2007/06/paris-hilton-an.html.

9 Cliff Kincaid, "Ann Coulter: The Britney Spears of the Right," *The National Ledger*, 3/4/07, http://www.nationalledger.com/politics-crime/ann-coulter-the-britney-spear-476040.shtml#.UAQgM_XAGq0.

10 Daniel Altman, "The United States of Narcissism," *The Daily Beast*, 7/17/11, http://www.thedailybeast.com/newsweek/2011/07/17/narcissism-is-on-the-rise-in-america.html. See also Jean M. Twenge and W. Keith Campbell, *The Narcissism Epidemic: Living in the Age of Entitlement*, Free Press, 2010 and Christopher Lasch, *The Culture of Narcissism: American Life in an Age of Diminishing Expectations*, W.W. Norton & Co., 1991.

Altman continued, "This movement didn't begin with a purely narcissistic slant, yet by the 1970s it had morphed into self-admiration, self-expression, and self-absorption. In the 1980s those qualities gave way to self-centeredness and self-indulgence, and it was all downhill from there."

Self appears to be all that exists. Magazines such as the self-styled *Self* have become a fixture in our culture, along with libraries of books and magazines (and, now, webzines) devoted to making one's self the center of one's universe. In recent years, the rise of social media sites such as Facebook, Twitter, and YouTube indicate a new generation has taken narcissism to a new level.



Social Media Narcissism

Narcissism in the Coulter Clan

Picture a narcissistic family within a narcissistic culture. Take Coulter's clan, for example. Born on the advent of the Sixties, Ann was raised in a familial petri dish in which narcissism reigned supreme.[11]

The first formative stage of Ann's life began with her birth. Naturally the center of attention – the center of her universe – as a baby in an incubator, that attention would continue throughout her years growing up in the Coulter home. As a child and young adult, Ann was shaped and molded by a whole host of factors and forces which are described in *The Beauty of Conservatism*.

Born into a wealthy, well-connected family, in the most prosperous county in America, Ann was raised with high expectations and had high aspirations. Ann's distant ancestors were Puritans, dating back almost to the Mayflower, while her more recent relations were all staunch Republicans. Expectations were high. Aspirations would follow suit.

Ann's father was a controlling, authoritarian father, while her mother was a "trophy mom." Authoritarian fathers tend to focus on the rules while failing to exhibit compassion. Trophy moms typically reward good behavior with fulsome praise while criticizing unmet expectations. It appears – or at least it probably appeared to Ann – that she was the recipient of performance-based love. Hence her insatiable need to get attention by performing.

Consequently, Ann's psychological template was set by the time she embarked for college.

Deeply conflicted, with a remarkably dynamic internal ambivalence, Coulter believes herself to be the crème de-la crème (wanting "the cream to rise to the top")

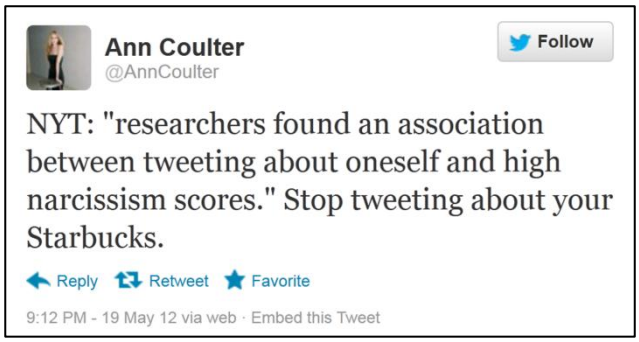
[11] For greater insight into the narcissistic family culture within which Coulter was raised, and an in-depth analysis of the more significant psychological forces which converged to shape the Ann Coulter so many people love or hate today, see the first three chapters in my free PDF book, *The Beauty of Conservatism: The Seduction of Ann Coulter and the Cuckolding of Conscience*, available at www.CoulterWatch.com/beauty.pdf.

while simultaneously questioning her own self-worth, especially when confronted by people who are brighter and more accomplished than her, or by situations which are beyond her ability to resolve.

Several formative stages emerged as Coulter strove to both prove herself and rise to the level of accomplishment to which she felt entitled. The first stage was bracketed by her graduate and post-graduate education and her legal experience as first an intern for a circuit court judge and then working briefly for two New York law firms. The second stage succeeded in bringing her dreams to fruition while the third stage heralds the dangers of getting what we seek.

Stage 1: Pursuing the Dream

After leaving the nest, several formative stages materialized in Coulter's adult life. **The first formative stage** revolved around her college years (ivy-league Cornell University and the elite University of Michigan Law School). Coulter literally took center stage dancing on table tops in her sorority, and figuratively did so journalistically in editing the *Cornell Review* and the *Michigan Law Review*.



While at Cornell, Coulter joined the Delta Gamma sorority, where, as she puts it, "youth is wasted on the young, so I wish I could go back and actually go to class this time, because my first two years I was dancing on the tables at sorority parties."[12] So enraptured by freedom from family and home, Coulter's emphasis was not on education but on the opposite sex: "I have to say I wouldn't have even gotten up in the morning if there hadn't been boys in class."[13] But then she got back on track, motivated to excel and achieve her dreams. But whose dreams? Her father's (law) or her own (journalism)?

Following a 1985 internship with the National Journalism Center, which included doing research for journalist Robert Novak, Coulter then attended the prestigious University of Michigan Law School, where she helped found the local chapter of the Federalist Society.

Throughout her adult life, Coulter expressed and exhibited a strong desire to be a journalist – but her father wanted her to be a lawyer and would only pay for college to pursue that career. In the early 1990s, Coulter settled down to a law career, but writing was always on her mind. She gave at least one speech, later published as a pro-life essay in *Human Life Review*, and she had one lengthy article on feminism and the law rejected by *National Review*, it's editor telling her to go on valium. Still pining to be published, Coulter abandoned her legal career and briefly joined the short-lived Center for Social Thought.

Stage 2: Grasping the Brass Ring

With the advent of the Gingrich Revolution in 1994, Coulter re-located to the nation's capital to work for the Senate, beginning the **second formative stage** of her adult life, which encompassed the latter years of the Nineties, when she would eventually take center stage on the national stage during the most turbulent years of the Clinton administration. Within a few short years, Coulter was catapulted from being an "obscure Senate aide"[14] to become an A-list celebrity and best-selling author.

---

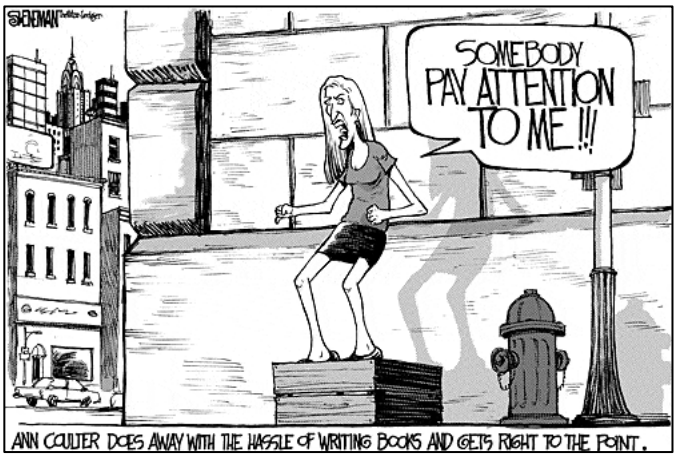
12 Ann Coulter, speech at Cornell, 5/7/06.

13 Ann Coulter, *Politically Incorrect*, ABC, 3/12/99.

14 Howard Kurtz, "The Blonde Flinging Bombshells at Bill Clinton," *Washington Post*, 10/16/98, http://www.washingtonpost.com/wp-srv/politics/special/clinton/stories/coulter101698.htm.

Each of Coulter's jobs were steppingstones to stardom. As a Senate staffer, Coulter met and worked with the political elite. As a pundit on MSNBC, in 1996-97, Coulter interacted with national newsmakers and analyzed current events on-air. At that time she also became a columnist for *Human Events* and gained legal credentials through her one-year employment at the Center for Individual Rights.

In 1997, Coulter achieved the notoriety she sought, being profiled in five publications in just one year, and becoming a regular guest on Bill Maher's popular *Politically Incorrect* before a nationwide audience in the millions.



Though fired by MSNBC for callous commentary (blaming a disabled Vietnam veteran for losing that war), Coulter later wrote a best-selling book perfectly timed for publication during the Clinton impeachment, setting the stage for a syndicated column with Universal Press Syndicate and a monthly column for the glossy, but short-lived *George* magazine. In 1999, Coulter even dabbled with the idea of running for Congress. Thus, all things turned golden for the faux golden girl.

Stage 3: Surfeit of Success

The **third formative stage** in Coulter's adult life encompassed the early years of the 21st century which gave birth to Coulter, Inc. Having become a force to be reckoned with – a mover and shaker, conservative icon, multiple best-selling author – Coulter readily reckons her force to accomplish her will. A decidedly Nietzschean will to power.

But success had its temporary drawbacks. With her success she became a target, especially given her propensity to prevaricate and purposely provoke her opponents. Coulter learned that being provocative (sexually and linguistically) can be very lucrative. All of Coulter's post-9/11 books are heavy in provocative polemics (and distorted truth). And all were released in the midst of some Coulter-created controversy. (Book sales would become a metric for Coulter to assess how much her audience loves her and, thus, to reaffirm her own self-worth.)

Moreover, Coulter has not only survived every indiscretion, every extremist expression, every ludicrous idea, but she and her career seem to thrive *because* of it. Throughout this century, every Coulter scandal has been met by Coulter with delight, denial, disdain, and dismissiveness. Always on the offensive, never to blame, Coulter revels in her self-righteousness, claiming simultaneously to be both victor and victim. Every criticism (no matter how valid) is regarded as an unjust attack upon her (making her a victim), yet she vanquishes all of her attackers (making her a victor).

Consequently, Coulter has no incentive to apologize for anything, to repent, to seek to become a better person, because *she is rewarded no matter what she does*. Indeed, repentance (or "backing down" as she would put it) is a concept which is anathema to her. To apologize or repent would be an admission of imperfection and only perfect people are worthy of love in her world.

Attributes of Narcissism

But what is narcissism? Until knowing Coulter, narcissism was not on my radar screen. It was an enigma. In some ways, it remains so. Yet it is such a powerful psychological force that it must be addressed. Rev. Robertson offered a good summation of narcissism:[15]

> The psychiatric disorder known as narcissism is named for the Greek hero, Narcissus, who fell in love with his own reflection. The Diagnostic and Statistical Manual of Mental Disorders describes narcissism as "A pervasive pattern of grandiosity, need for admiration, and lack of empathy." It goes on to say, "Lying is the most common complaint about narcissists and in many instances, defects of empathy lead narcissists to wildly inaccurate misinterpretations of other people's speech and actions, so that they may believe that they are liked and respected despite a history of callous and exploitative personal interactions." Treatment is nearly impossible since the narcissist always thinks that the problem lies with someone else.[16]

Erwin W. Lutzer, senior minister of Moody Memorial Church in Chicago, encourages Christians living in a spiritually darkening with these words: "Jonathan Edwards, a leader during the First Great Awakening in America, argued that God grants light when the darkness is the greatest, and it was in just such times that the glorious periods of revival occurred in America's history."[17] I would add that that great redemptive light miraculously falls by grace upon individuals and groups of people whom He has called for His purposes. Often the darkness in an individual's soul must be at its deepest in order to reach the lost soul. When that person is truly redeemed and transformed by God's grace, she will know it is of God and not of herself. Doing it by ourselves is impossible, but with God all things are possible.

Narcissists frequently use their God-given gifts, talents, and opportunities to achieve the measure of success which they seek. Upon achieving their dreams of fame and fortune, glory and power, they credit themselves with their accomplishments. In their minds and hearts, they believe all the resources were theirs – belonged to them – and hence the achieved goals were due solely to themselves. Such arrogance discounts the provident hand of God and the abundant blessings poured down from heaven.

Lacking gratitude and humility, narcissists regard each of their accomplishments as proof of their worthiness, as evidence of their superiority, and as verification of their entitlement to success. Money and

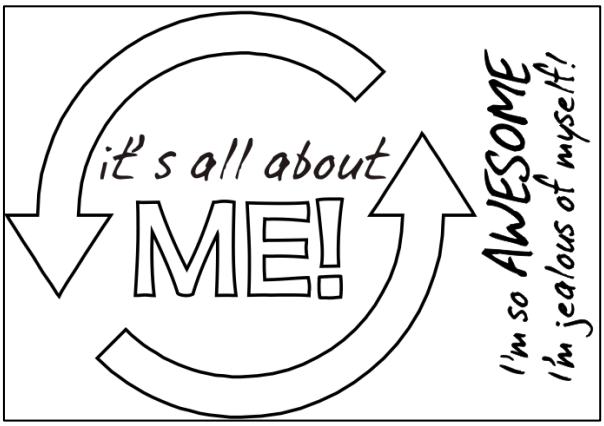
---

15 See Anne Robertson, http://www.annerobertson.com/Podcasts/Devotionstext/SpiritWalkers82.htm.

16 Robertson's assessment of narcissism and diagnosis of Coulter as having that affliction appear accurate, though they last sentence appears perhaps overly pessimistic. Two points are critical to grasp. First, narcissists who think they're always right feel they have no need to change, hence the dire prognosis of the quoted psychologist. Recall that Coulter often says she has never changed and has no need to change, no need to retract anything she has ever said, or to apologize for anything she has ever done. Second, the Christian faith posits a Creator revealed in creation who is able to bring anyone to repentance, to translate anyone from the kingdom of darkness to the kingdom of light. Hence, Christians should petition God to redeem and transform Coulter, beginning with opening her eyes to her true self and to the transformational power of the One who can redeem her.

17 Erwin W. Lutzer, "America's Spiritual Crisis," International Awakening Ministries.

fame, glory and power, fans and groupies, awards and accolades, these all act as validation and reaffirmation of the heart of a narcissist who is then further mesmerized by what she has and can achieve. She can feel that she can conquer the world (even though she cannot conquer herself). Having been vindicated by whatever she herself has accomplished, the narcissist re-focuses her attention on herself even as she ungratefully dismisses the providence provided by the Creator.



Seven Deadly Sins of Narcissism

There are any number of authorities to whom one could look for a greater understanding of narcissism. Therapist Dr. Sandy Hotchkiss has identified "the seven deadly sins of narcissism."[18] These include …

1. *Shamelessness*: Narcissists are frequently incapable of being shamed by their wrong behavior and, often, take pride in their wrong behavior. Coulter exemplifies this trait. With every controversy she herself contrives, Coulter never backs down, never apologizes, but rather justifies and amplifies her remarks.
2. *Addictive thinking*: Narcissists engage in addictive thinking,[19] which includes having a distorted self-image and projection of their own wrong thoughts, words, and actions onto others. We have seen the traits of addictive thinking in Coulter since before the turn of this century, traits which have become magnified throughout her post-9/11 career.
3. *Arrogance*: Having an often grossly overinflated self-image (while simultaneously experiencing nagging self-doubts), narcissists tend to put others down to raise themselves up. Self-exaltation is at the core of everything Coulter does.
4. *Envy*: Narcissists tend to diminish the abilities and accomplishments of those they feel threatened by in order to boost their own self-esteem and affirm their own superiority.
5. *Entitlement*: Because narcissists feel superior to others, they feel entitled to special treatment and are angered when they are not accorded the attention or treatment they feel they deserve.
6. *Exploitation*: Feeling superior to others and entitled to whatever they think they deserve, narcissists will exploit others for their own purposes, regardless of the impact upon the one exploited. As noted by more than one source on the Internet, "Narcissists are manipulative and create a web of deceit."
7. *Inappropriate boundaries*: Normal personal and societal boundaries are non-existent for narcissists who see the whole fabric of life revolving around themselves. Being the center of the universe, everyone else exists to serve their needs.

---

[18] See Sandy Hotchkiss, *Why Is It Always About You? The Seven Deadly Sins of Narcissism*, Free Press, 2002.

[19] See chapter 5 ("… and Balls") of my free PDF book, *The Beauty of Conservatism: The Seduction of Ann Coulter and the Cuckolding of Conscience*, available at www.CoulterWatch.com/beauty.pdf.

Coulter exhibits each of these traits to one degree or another. Christian therapist Hannah Hope offers additional insight in *Narcissism for Dummies*.[20] Hope observes that narcissism …

> is *a way of thinking, relating, and being in the world that is trapped in selfishness, self-centeredness, and self-absorption*. It is a form of arrested development. Narcissists are chronically immature. They never grew up inside. A certain part of their brain never developed the capacity to relate to others as whole people, to see others as worthy and complex in their own right (beyond superficiality), to really love others in reciprocal, mutual, and personality enhancing ways. Narcissists are born and made, with nature and nurture influences that allow the emergence of a creature arrested in self-love.

Time Hearts Ann Coulter

Searching for some new way to support the "Coulter's really important" thesis, Time latches onto this unique angle: "As a congressional staff member 10 years ago, Coulter used to help *write the nation's laws.* Now she is far more powerful: she helps set the nation's tone" (emphasis added). Forget the nonsense about setting the tone – even conservative scribes don't buy in to that. But Coulter, working between 1995 and 1997 for Sen. Spencer Abraham, R-Mich., helped write the nation's laws?

According to contemporaneous news clips from Capitol Hill trade publications, such as the Hill and National Journal, Coulter at the time was almost always referred to as either Abraham's "deputy press secretary" or his "legislative assistant." In 1995, one article noted that Coulter "puts on conferences and seminars" for the senator. It wasn't until she actually left Abraham's office in '97 that Coulter received a retroactive promotion in the press and morphed into Abraham's former legal counsel, which makes it sound like she wrote laws.

We don't begrudge anyone padding their résumé. It's a Beltway tradition. But *Time* looks pretty foolish for trying to turn that fluff – and Coulter herself – into a cover story of substance.

– Eric Boehlert, "Time Hearts Ann Coulter," *Salon*, 4/19/05.

Narcissists seek approval from others – require "external sources of self-esteem" as therapist Joseph Burgo puts it – to feel good about themselves. They need to see themselves (or rather, their *image* of themselves) reflected in others.

Can anyone say "self-absorption?" Coulter wrote:

> All I kept hearing was, "Ann pays more." That's all I ever hear when Democrats start in with all that "investing." Apparently the government will be "investing" in education, "investing" in technology, "investing" in roads and "investing" in lots and lots of government workers. Ann pays more, Ann pays more, Ann pays more.[21]

[20] See "Narcissism for Dummies (and for the rest of us who don't know what narcissism is)," 5/9/11, http://christiannarcissism.wordpress.com/2011/05/09/narcissism-for-dummies-and-for-the-rest-of-us-who-dont-know-what-narcissism-is/.

[21] Ann Coulter, "Hope, Change and Invest," 1/26/11.

Coulter vs. Princess Diana

Princess Diana would have turned 50 years old this July 1, and with added interest in the Royal family thanks to **Prince William**'s recent marriage, people are talking about her again a little more than usual. And of course, almost everyone remembers the People's Princess with stars in their eyes… except maybe **Ann Coulter**. When asked about her opinion of Diana, **Ann** tells 'The Insider':

> "I find it a little baffling when Americans get so gaga-eyed over a princess, and particularly **Lady Di**, who was just this anorexic, bulimic narcissist."

Wow. Obviously, **Ann** won't be hanging out with **Prince William** and **Kate Middleton** when they come to the United States after their Canada trip.

Do you think what **Ann** said was totally disrespectful?

It is perhaps a measure of her pathology that Coulter has had a long-standing feud with Princess Diana, who's been dead for 15 years. Nevertheless, Coulter seems compelled to express enmity toward the "People's Princess," perhaps because she senses that she will never have the depth of love and adoration Diana received from so many people.

In 1997, Coulter called Diana an unfit mother and a whore and, in 2012, said she was an "anorexic, bulimic narcissist."[22] Perhaps Coulter's animosity derives from Diana's status as a single mother, a cohort of humanity she has castigated for decades. In *Guilty* (2009), Coulter seemed to agree with the statement that "[single mothers are] overtly dominant, aggressive, narcissistic and bitterly hostile."[23] Narcissism again!

Coulter then immediately claimed "These women are afflicting their social pathologies on their own children …" Just a few sentences later, in discussing a particular single mother, Coulter sarcastically added, "At least she has the one trait that makes for a great mother: a narcissistic obsession with self-indulgence."

It's All About Me

In the *Beauty of Conservatism*,[24] I addressed the various traits of addictive thinking, which include denial, projection, and rationalization. It may seem counterintuitive, but those traits are all *self*-focused. In *denial*, the person obsessively looks away from self to another for the source of her problems, all the while seeing herself as the victim of those creating the problem. Using *projection*, the person projects one's own patterns of thinking and feeling onto others. And using *rationalization*, the person rationalizes her own behavior to justify herself.

Similarly, the New Testament is replete with psychological descriptions and stories of the Pharisees which show a striking similarity with Coulter's personality and character. Examples and analysis will be sprinkled throughout this book. It is noteworthy that they are all self-focused.

Even Jeff Emanuel of Red State observed of Coulter's obsession with Romney and defense of Romneycare that she was effectively "yelling 'Hey! HEY! Look at ME!!!'"

'Three Cheers for Romneycare'

Standing athwart history and yelling 'Hey! HEY!! Look at ME!!!'

Posted by **Jeff Emanuel** (Diary)
Thursday, February 2nd at 11:00AM EDT
76 Comments

Like Tweet +1

Jennifer Rubin, the *Washington Post*'s resident Romney campaign mouthpiece, has been joined by another conservative pundit in the "I left my dignity at the altar of Mitt Romney" club This time, as you may have heard, the offender is Ann Coulter, whose support for the former

[22] See chapter 8 for additional details.

[23] Ann Coulter, *Guilty: Liberal "Victims" and Their Assault on America*, Crown Forum, 2009, pg. 56.

[24] In particular, see Chapter 5 ("… and Ball!") in my free PDF book, *The Beauty of Conservatism: The Seduction of Ann Coulter and the Cuckolding of Conscience*, available at www.CoulterWatch.com/beauty.pdf.

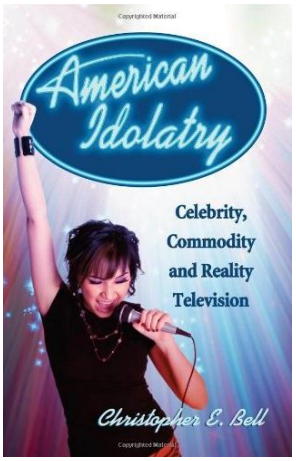
Chapter 2

Idolatry

"I think I have a greater life than anyone in the universe." – *Ann Coulter*

Ann Coulter Is My Idol

Some fans call Coulter their idol, or wear clothes emblazoned with "Ann Coulter is my idol!" In response to a fan who gushed, "You're my idol," Coulter exclaimed, "God bless you! See, all the pretty girls are on my side."[1] It would appear that Coulter is also an idol to herself.[2]



(One of Coulter's continuing contradictions is claiming that only conservatives are attractive and liberals are not, yet admitting that liberal "air-head actresses" have beauty. Speaking to those actresses, Coulter said, "God gave you the gift of genetic beauty and nothing between your ears."[3])

In her 2004 biographical documentary, Coulter bragged:

> My hobby has become my life. I have the greatest life imaginable. I think I have a greater life than anyone in the universe. I sleep till noon. I work in my underwear. I'm my own boss. No one can fire me. The only people who can fire me are the American people.[4]

Two years earlier, she boasted:

> That's right. The American people like me; editors don't. I've arranged my life so that I am unfireable. I don't have any bosses. The only people who can fire me are the American people. … The American people don't think [I am a screeching reactionary]. I speak for them.[5]

Yes, that's right, Coulter speaks for the American people! *All* of them? Peter T. King put it nicely, "Ann Coulter has become a legend in her own mind."[6]

---

1 Ann Coulter, quoted in Patrick Wright's 2004 documentary, *Is It True What They Say About Ann?* A more correct response would have been to express gratitude for the compliment but observe that no human being qualifies for that honor. The only One who can be idolized or worshipped is God.

2 Coulter fans who object to my characterization of Coulter in this way will have to reconcile their views with Coulter's. In her 2002 book, *Slander*, Coulter asserted that all liberals are godless and have turned themselves into gods, and in her 2006 book, *Godless*, Coulter again claimed that all liberals are godless and that they have created an elaborate idolatrous religious system. In contrast, my thesis is that some (not all) on the Right regard Coulter as a goddess (they even *say* they do!) and that she herself (an *individual*, not a collective) talks and behaves as if she is a goddess.

3 Ann Coulter, *Hannity*, FNC, 10/15/12. One should note Coulter's continuing claims of liberal stupidity – "nothing between your ears" – as a major criterion of self-worth. She obviously considers herself of worth. Perhaps most significantly, Coulter is concerned only with the *head*, not the *heart*.

4 Ann Coulter, quoted in Patrick Wright's 2004 documentary, *Is It True What They Say About Ann?*

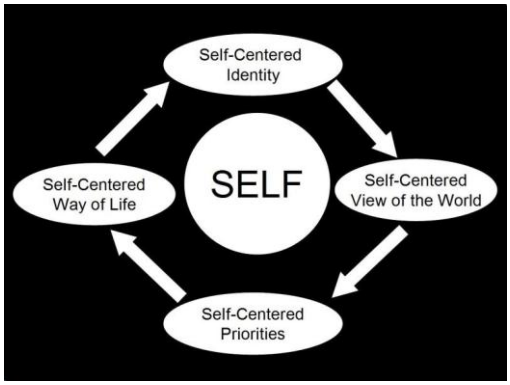
5 George Gurley, "Coultergeist," *New York Observer*, 8/20/02.

6 Peter T. King, quoted in Susan Estrich, *Soulless: Ann Coulter and the Right-Wing Church of Hate*, William Morrow, 2006, pg. 71.

Narcissism = Self-Worship

As we pursue the thesis of this book, it behooves us to obtain a firmer grasp of the nature of narcissism. Before knowing Coulter, narcissism as a concept eluded me. It was foreign to me and did not even register on my radar. Now, it's reality astonishes me.

Narcissism is, at heart, self-worship.[7] Narcissists are enraptured with themselves. Others use the term "self-love" to describe a narcissist, but self-worship is really more accurate – and more damning. As W. H. Auden observed, "Narcissus does not fall in love with his reflection because it is beautiful, but because it is his. If it were his beauty that enthralled him, he would be set free in a few years by its fading."



Author Jim Lichtman noted, "Coulter's first epiphany came in response to an article she wrote for the [Cornell] university's paper. When she began receiving hate mail, she realized… she *liked it!* It was at that moment – her biographer will later record – when Ann Hart Coulter swept herself off her feet and fell head-over-heels in love with herself!"[8]

Falling in love with herself was not very difficult. She had been groomed from childhood to love herself, to regard herself as among the best of the best, to be the cream rising to the top. As her best friend, Jim Moody, told me, "Ann's a high-aimer." She always wanted the brass ring. Even hate mail was proof to her that she had grasped it.

What's not to love? Coulter's self-love and self-worship is evident in the recurrent memes she creates and encourages about herself: 1) beauty, 2) brains, 3) courage, and 4) heroic victim.[9]

Narcissists also worship a pantheon of lesser gods – such as fame and fortune – which, in turn, validate and vindicate the narcissist (see later chapters). But, as we will see, Coulter's self-love and self-worship is mixed with self-doubt and self-loathing. (Self – it's all about self! A narcissist!) And when her self-image does not measure up with reality, confusion and self-doubt materialize.[10]

In her books, Coulter claims that liberals (the implication is "all" liberals) worship themselves as gods. Remarkably, few conservatives have challenged Coulter's claim, though they will undoubtedly criticize me for calling "one" particular person self-worshipping. Before returning to self-worship, let's take a closer look at idolatry itself.[11]

---

7 See Dr. Sam Vaknin, *Malignant Self-Love: Narcissism Revisited*, Narcissus Publications, 1991, 2001, 2003 and Drew Pinsky, *The Mirror Effect: How Celebrity Narcissism is Seducing America*, HarperCollins, 2009.

8 Jim Lichtman, *Shameless: The Ethical Case Against Three Out-of-Control Critics And the need for Civility Now More Than Ever*, Scribbler's Ink, 2011.

9 Each of these areas are addressed in my free PDF book, *The Beauty of Conservatism: The Seduction of Ann Coulter and the Cuckolding of Conscience*, available at www.CoulterWatch.com/beauty.pdf.

10 The psychological mechanics of addictive thinking are covered in Chapter 2 ("The Cuckolding of Conscience") and Chapter 5 ("… and Balls!") in my free PDF book, *The Beauty of Conservatism: The Seduction of Ann Coulter and the Cuckolding of Conscience*, available at www.CoulterWatch.com/beauty.pdf.

11 Some people have admiration, even adoration, of Ann despite her many irrefutable flaws and unconscionable controversies. They have a very low threshold for adoration which is defined as 1) an act of worship, and 2) deep love or esteem. Adoration of anyone or anything other than God is idolatry.

Idolatry

In his book, *Vanishing Conscience*, evangelist and scholar John MacArthur remarks on the wide-ranging aspects of present-day idolatry. He writes, "People in modern culture tend to have materialistic idols – money, prestige, success, philosophy, health, pleasure, sports, entertainment, possessions, and other such things."[12] Many of those listed idols (principally the first four) are self-evidently worshiped by Coulter. MacArthur continues, "Those things become idols when we give them the love and dedication we owe to God. The problem is the same – worshiping the creation rather than the Creator."

The psalmist declared the universality and the futility of worshipping false gods and idols. He wrote:

> The idols of the nations are silver and gold, the work of men's hands. They have mouths, but they do not speak; eyes they have, but they do not see; they have ears, but they do not hear; nor is there any breath in their mouths. Those who make them are like them; so is everyone who trusts in them (Ps. 135:15-18).

Yes, you read that right: those who worship and trust in idols *become like their idols*.

As MacArthur noted, there are many forms of idolatry in our celebrity-driven culture. Sports heroes, pop stars, glamour queens, five-minutes-of-fame for anything. Others seek a more enduring fame while worshiping what they do and receiving worship from others for what they do.

According to Patrick X. Coyle of Young America's Foundation, "Ann Coulter is a star among conservative students! Her books are best sellers. Her campus lectures are the most popular events on campus. Swooning fans wait hours to hear her speak."[13]

Swooning fans?

Untouchables

Coulter's close friend, Eric Bolling, himself a multi-millionaire and host of several TV talk shows, recently observed the nexus of money, celebrity, and morality in college sports. In the wake of NCAA sanctions against Penn State for the Jerry Sandusky child abuse scandal, Bolling said, "When you go play major college sports, the environment on campuses is such that coaches are like rock stars, they're like gods on campus. the players are as well, but the coaches – they're untouchables. So there's this environment of they're holier than thou, they're above the law."[14]

---

[12] John MacArthur, *The Vanishing Conscience: Drawing the Line in a No-Fault, Guilt-Free World*, Thomas Nelson, 1994, pg. 65.

[13] Patrick X. Coyle, "Ann Coulter and the Young America's Foundation: Partners in Changing Campuses," *Libertas*, Winter 2005, pg. 16, http://www.yaf.org/uploadedFiles/Webpages/Alumni/Coulter%20Profile.pdf?n=2364.

[14] Eric Bolling, *The Five*, FNC, 7/23/12.

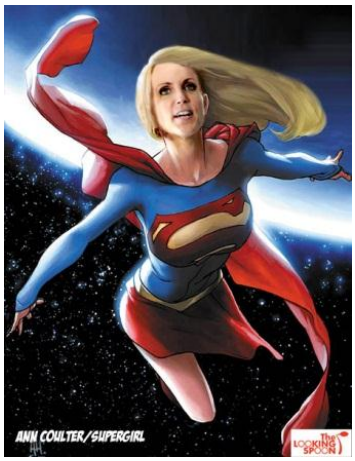
Bolling added that in Penn State's case the underlying matter of protecting a serial child abuser was especially egregious in that it "was a bad violation of ethics and morals," concluding with a rebuke of the university: "You know what, Penn State, you brought it on yourself, you deserve everything you got."

Later in the show, Bolling spoke a truth which he is particularly loath to apply to his friend, Coulter: "When you violate people's trust you have to pay the price." Bolling, Hannity, and other friends and colleagues of Coulter – who themselves condemn others for the very behavior which Coulter exhibits – refuse to address Coulter's misbehavior – her lies, her hate speech, her violations of morals and ethics – even when it occurs on their own shows or in their presence. Coulter has become an untouchable. Idolatry in its many forms breeds hypocrisy and other derivative sins.

Coulter, a rock star of the Conservative Movement, an icon called an idol and treated as a goddess, continually violates "people's trust" and all those who enable her misbehavior will ultimately "have to pay the price," whether it be damage to their own reputations or a smitten conscience. Coulter has become "untouchable" and "too big to fail." She frequently brags that she cannot be fired and that her career will never end!

MacArthur observes, "A hypocrite is one who deliberately tries to steal glory from God. He wants a little glory for himself" (Matthew 6:1-2),[15] which brings us back to self-worship.

Self-Worship



When we worship idols, we *choose* to worship someone or something other than God. In essence, we are both defying God and also telling Him that He isn't good enough for us. We want something better. In doing so, we are really worshipping ourselves, exalting *our* prerogatives, elevating *our* needs and *our* desires, above everything else.

Self-obsession tends toward self-exaltation and self-worship. In turn, people are drawn to worship false gods – idols – who can bestow upon them the desires of their hearts and receive the worship they themselves crave.

Those who feel they are *worthy* of worship[16] *want* to be worshipped[17] and are *angered* when they are not.[18] Those who deny the gods risk their wrath. The wrath of Coulter is something to behold.[19]

---

15 John MacArthur, *Worship: The Ultimate Priority*, Moody, 2012, pg. 171.

16 Here, I use the word worship in a broader context to include lauding the individual with praise, awards, accolades, and the like. Often people who feel unrewarded, underappreciated, or not given their due will seek to be appeased, as all man-made gods desire. The smallest slight can become magnified beyond imagination.

17 Worshipped in whatever way they feel is due them, whether lavish praise, agreeing to do things their way, etc.

18 One need only think of the proverbial woman scorned to get a sense of the consequences for failure to appease those seeking worship.

19 Numerous instances in her written and spoken commentary (and private and public actions) attest to the wrath which is ever-ready to explode at will, targeted at the "enemy of the moment." Remarkably, hers is a controlled wrath in which she carefully chooses her words – the most destructive words available at the time – to attack the target in her sites. Misapplying Scripture, Coulter often does not let the sun go down on her wrath, not before it's been released into action. In fact, more often than not the sun goes down day after day after day and her wrath remains. One example should suffice: her hatred toward feminists remains unabated since at least the early 1990s. Forgiveness seems a foreign concept to Coulter. But then, narcissists typically have little or no empathy for the plight and feelings of others.

Seeking Glory

Rather than fear the wrath of Coulter, one should fear the wrath of God. MacArthur writes:

> God does not give His glory away or share it in any sense. In Isaiah 48:11 God says, "My glory will I not give to another." He will give us temporal blessing, wisdom, riches, and honor, but never His glory. God cannot divest Himself of who He is. He plants His glory within believers, but never apart from Himself. The glory does not become ours – it is still His glory radiating through us – there because God Himself dwells there in the person of the Holy Spirit.[20]

Believers who fail to grasp the significance of God sharing His glory in us through His Son and the Holy Spirit are prone to praise and exalt themselves, crediting themselves for the grace given them by God.

People with a wrong perspective and wrong worship, seeking self-glory and the adoration of others, risk spiritual, mental, and emotional decline. Their worldview often gets turned upside down, to the point where "they glory in their shame, with minds set on earthly things" (Phil. 3:19).

In the Gospel of John, Jesus provides this caution: "He who speaks from himself seeks his own glory; but He who seeks the glory of the One who sent Him is true, and no unrighteousness is in Him" (John 7:18). The prophet Jeremiah recorded God's priorities for mankind in relation to glory:

> [23] Thus says the LORD: "Let not the wise man glory in his wisdom, let not the mighty man glory in his might, nor let the rich man glory in his riches; [24] but let him who glories glory in this, that he understands and knows Me, that I am the LORD, exercising lovingkindness, judgment, and righteousness in the earth. For in these I delight," says the LORD" (Jer. 9:23-24).

Freeper Madness

Ann Coulter's *craving* for attention, her *lust* for love and admiration, were *palpable* at the March for Justice rally sponsored by Free Republic on October 31, 1998.

Coulter – initially slated to appear[21] – suddenly withdrew under pressure from her publisher, who was hawking her book as "objective" and "non-partisan." *Breaking* her word to Regnery, Coulter felt *compelled* to ("had to") attend and go on stage. The adulation from the audience was great; her remarks were brief. As she walked on stage, amidst thunderous applause, she said, "I said I wouldn't talk."[22] One Freeper shouted, "We love you, Annie!" Unable to *contain* herself, Coulter *burst* out, "*God bless you*!" Then she exclaimed:

> I promised my publisher that in the interests of appearing non-partisan that I would not be speaking today but I had to come and see my fellow Freepers. Um, I can't tell you what a wonderful thing it is to go on Free Republic – which I do every day and I did about 17 times a day when I was out of the country for a while – um, God bless you all. Thanks.[23]

Her desire for fame and glory is, at times, palpable, and is often reflected in her writings.

---

[20] John MacArthur, *Worship: The Ultimate Priority*, Moody, 2012, pp. 166-167.
[21] Email Announcement, Free Republic..
[22] Ann Coulter, Freeper Rally, 10/31/98.
[23] See the chapter on Fame for greater clarity.

You've Got Mail

Coulter craves media attention and relishes love letters from her fans to fill the void within her soul. In a remarkably revealing piece, Coulter's lust for love was evident in one of her *legal* columns devoted to her *fan* mail.[24] Coulter began with these words:

> I'm sorry I haven't replied. I'm about a thousand letters behind, and since it would take the entire new year to do so, I just thought I'd try to relieve the guilt a bit by writing a column telling you how much I appreciate your letters, and explain why you haven't heard back from me yet.

Continuing, Coulter claimed, "I've read them all [thousands of letters]," adding that "those letters mean a lot to me." Coulter added, "That is why I love my mail. Apart from my parents and a few friends – and I know they like me – it's the only feedback I get." Moreover, "Some letters are so touching I carry them around with me for a while. I still intend to respond someday, which is why I still have them all."

Concluding her legal column for the week, Coulter wrote, "But I don't need television, and I certainly don't need pathetically frail bosses in any context. I do need those letters."

Pharisees – Idolatry

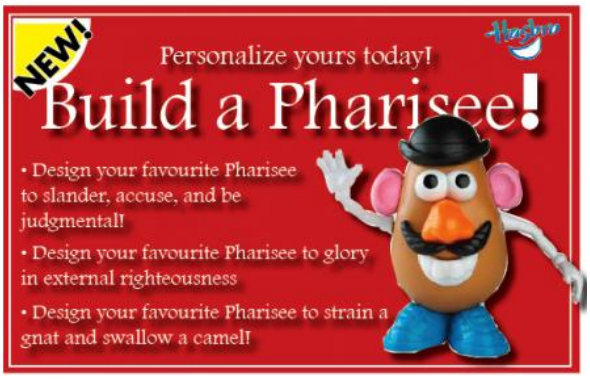
Remember Bolling's comment about some stars being *untouchables* – *above* the law – because they are *worshipped*?

The Pharisees were the religious and moral leaders of Jesus' day. The Pharisees were the Religious Right of His time and the *one* group He roundly and repeatedly condemned (though *not* for being religious or for being right). Rather, Jesus warned His disciples: "Beware of the leaven of the Pharisees, which is hypocrisy."[25]

Jesus pronounced multiple woes on the Pharisees for their heartless hypocrisy,[26] calling them "hypocrites," "whitewashed tombs," and "Serpents, brood of vipers!" They were "blind guides," "blind fools," and "blind men." In sound-bite syntax, they were indeed *heartless hypocrites*.

The Pharisees had *become* heartless hypocrites. Jesus condemned them for a whole list of character traits – *all* of which can be accurately ascribed to Ann Coulter. These traits included:

- pride and self-exaltation
- legalism and judgmentalism
- lovers of glory
- lovers of money
- lovers of themselves
- self-righteousness and sense of superiority
- full of hatred and full of hypocrisy
- hate-mongers
- elitists
- trusted in themselves and not in God



[24] Ann Coulter, "You've Got Mail," *Human Events*, 1/14/00.
[25] Luke 12:1.
[26] Matthew chapter 23.

Ann Coulter has exhibited at one time or another every one of these traits. Those exhibited traits have been amply documented. "The Pharisees feared contamination from ritual uncleanness, but Jesus pointed out that their greed, pride, and wickedness contaminated the entire nation."[27] Consequently, because "a little leaven leavens the lump"[28] and "one rotten apple ruins the barrel," we should, therefore, "purge out the old leaven"[29] to become pure. The apostle John exhorts Christians everywhere, "Little children, keep yourselves from idols" (1st John 5:21).

The Pharisees – Self-Righteous Moral Superiority

Evangelist and best-selling author Timothy Keller observes, "The devil, if anything, prefers Pharisees – men and women who try to save themselves. They are more unhappy than either mature Christians *or* irreligious people, and they do a lot more spiritual damage."[30] Keller explains, "They build their sense of worth on their moral and spiritual performance, as a kind of résumé to present before God and the world."[31]

British poet Richard Lovelace wrote about Pharisaicism: "Many … draw their assurance of acceptance with God from their sincerity, their past experience of conversion, their recent religious performance of the relative infrequency of their conscious, willful disobedience."[32] Lovelace continues, "Their insecurity shows itself in pride, a fierce, defensive assertion of their own righteousness, and defensive criticism of others. They come naturally to hate other cultural styles and other races in order to bolster their own security and discharge their oppressed anger."

As noted above, traits of Pharisaicism includes pride, prejudice, and the pursuit of power (the topics for the next three chapters). Keller warns, "Pharisees need to shore up their sense of righteousness, so they despise and attack all who don't share their doctrinal beliefs and religious practices. Racial and cultural imperialism result."[33] Sound familiar?

In a blast from the past, consider Coulter's words from 1997, not as a defense of traditional family values, but rather in light of the topic of this chapter:

> The main overarching point I wanted to make is that I think, especially since listening to the callers, and the sort of moral fervor and censoriousness – I think it's a strong human impulse to be self-righteous and censorious and, now, it's gotten to the point where we can't be self-righteous and censorious of the things that humans have been censorious for the past 5,000 years, like illegitimacy, like deserting your country in a time of war … It's because we are not censorious and self-righteous about promiscuous sex, not to say perverted sex, all of the censoriousness comes bubbling up and it's all directed to smokers.[34]

Yes, Coulter *advocates* for a self-righteous and censorious spirit.

---

27 *The Bible Knowledge Commentary: New Testament*, ed. John F. Walvoord & Roy B. Zuck, Victor Books, 1983, pg. 237.
28 1st Cor. 5:6.
29 1st Cor. 5:7.
30 Timothy Keller, *The Reason for God: Belief in an Age of Skepticism*, Dutton Adult, 2008, pg. 178.
31 *Ibid*.
32 Richard Lovelace quoted by Timothy Keller, *The Reason for God: Belief in an Age of Skepticism*, Dutton Adult, 2008, pp. 178-179.
33 Timothy Keller, *The Reason for God: Belief in an Age of Skepticism*, Dutton Adult, 2008, pg. 179.
34 Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 3/20/97.

Unrestrained

As they say, Coulter has *attitude* – the attitude of "I can say anything" – and she does! Nothing is off limits for her because there is absolutely no accountability for her for anything she says or does. Her family, friends, colleagues, and henchmen are ever alert to come to her aid in a crisis. She can get away with *anything – and she knows it*!

Coulter uses humor to good effect, often making her points in dramatic and insightful ways, or deflecting inconvenient arguments. But her humor often points to a darker side, being deliberately offensive or employing elimination rhetoric. There appears to be no off switch, no filter, no discernment or wisdom in what is appropriate for an occasion or what morally crosses the line.

Indeed, Coulter continually pushes the envelope because she wants to *control* the envelope. She wants no criticism of her own speech, no matter how outrageous, yet quickly condemns those with whom she disagrees to restrict or inhibit their speech. Coulter crowed:

> I mean, this is the same thing we go through every six months. I say something, the same people become hysterical, and that's the end of it. … This is about my 17th allegedly career-ending moment. … That's what has happened every other time for about a decade now.[35]

Coulter is so enamored with her own wit and intellect – and so used to talking her way out of every sticky situation – that she no longer has a filter on her thoughts. Indeed, she says that she can say anything she wants. What she means is not that she has the *freedom* to say what she wants but that she's never held *accountable* for what she says or does.[36]

For instance, Coulter's habit of wearing what she herself calls her "total slutty look," entices prurient thoughts about her. The PR0N Index (percentage of search results) for "Ann Coulter" is 44.5% – almost one half of all searches for her name lead to porn sites![37] Why don't Christians and conservatives – Coulter's audience – call her out on her failure to walk the talk?

---

35 Ann Coulter, *Hannity & Colmes*, FNC, 3/5/07.

36 I believe that Ann is a lost little lamb (perhaps wishful thinking on my part) who needs to be found by the Savior she professes. Lost people can become very confused because they *are* lost. Confusion and contradiction have been hallmarks of Coulter's public career. Certainly, Coulter is known for some insightful and witty observations, but she is also renowned for her inanities. One could argue that hypocrisy – which reigns in Coulter's life – is a fruit of a confused life. One who demands honesty and integrity from others yet lies with abandon, demonstrating a pattern of prevarication in virtually all areas of her life. One who decries hate speech and character assassination while engaging in those very behaviors.

37 See http://pr0nindex.appspot.com/, accessed 9/14/12.

Despite her brazenness and bravado, it seems that Coulter's faith, at best, is surprisingly anemic. Given the choice between principles and pragmatism, between doing what is right and doing what is expedient, Coulter frequently takes the easy path. Instead of exhibiting faith in the principles she proclaims or in the God she professes, Coulter's courage wanes. We see that every presidential cycle, when she attempts to sway the electorate with trickery and deceit (see the series of case studies provided later in this book).

Twitter Twit

Coulter is so unrestrained – and so enamored with herself – that she literally says, and tweets, whatever enters her mind. She boasts, "I have no unexpressed thought." I tend to believe her on that one point. During the Vice Presidential debate, Coulter's tweets weren't even sophomoric, they were juvenile, enough so that Sarah Palin tweeted that a 10-year-old was tweeting for Coulter.

Which is more disconcerting, that a journalistic leader and eminent wordsmith places no filter on the words she expresses, or the childish nature of those words she chooses to express?

Is Coulter engaging in a stream of consciousness rap session with herself? If so, she's losing. She is apparently so enraptured with herself that she cannot conceive of saying or doing something which is imperfect or inappropriate. It is noteworthy that during her love-fests on *Red Eye*, Coulter's humor frequently becomes juvenile. Among her peers in a very relaxed setting, she really lets her guard down.

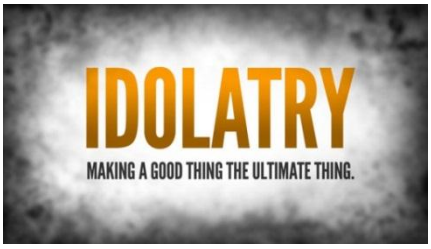
One would expect a person with over a half-century of life experiences to exhibit a certain degree of emotional maturity and a modicum of human decency, but apparently one would be wrong.

Counterfeit Gods

In *Counterfeit Gods*, Timothy Keller specifically identifies money, sex, and power as counterfeit gods which make empty promises and lead people away from the only hope that matters.

> What are the gods of beauty, power, money, and achievement but these same things that have assumed mythic proportions in our individual lives and in our society? We may not physically kneel before the statue of Aphrodite, but many young women today are driven into depression and eating disorders by an obsessive concern over their body image.[38]

Regarding the deification of beauty, Keller explains, "physical beauty is a pleasant thing, but if you 'deify' it, if you make it the most important thing in a person's life or a culture's life, then you have Aphrodite, not just beauty."[39] Keller continues, "You have people, and an entire culture, constantly agonizing over appearance, spending inordinate amounts of time and money on it, and foolishly evaluating character on the basis of it."



Turning to filthy lucre, Keller references Luke 12:15, where Jesus said, "Take heed and beware of covetousness, for one's life does not consist in the abundance of the things he possesses." Keller notes, "The term [consist] describes a personal identity based on money. It refers to people who, if they lose their wealth, do not have a 'self' left."[40] What a warning to each of us – no self left. This principle

---

[38] Timothy Keller, *Counterfeit Gods: The Empty Promises of Money, Sex, and Power, and the Only Hope that Matters*, Dutton, 2009, pg. xii.
[39] *Ibid*., pp. xviii-xix.
[40] *Ibid*., pg. 56.

also applies to anything our personal identity is based upon if it is not based upon the life of the risen Jesus.

Keller warns that "*all* idolatries enslave,"[41] and that each of us is predisposed to choose our own idols according to our personalities, tastes, and needs. Some …

> are strongly motivated by a desire for influence and power, while others are more excited by approval and appreciation. Some want emotional and physical comfort more than anything else, while still others want security, the control of their environment. People with the deep idol of power do not mind being unpopular in order to gain influence. People who are most motivated by approval are the opposite – they will gladly lose power and control as long as everyone thinks well of them.[42]

As Keller observes, "Each deep idol – power, approval, comfort or control – generates a different set of fears and a different set of hopes."[43] And each will *inevitably* fail the worshiper because all idols not only "enslave," but they are also all *powerless* to save.

Worshiping in Spirit and in Truth

MacArthur points out in his book, *Worship*, the existence of a demarcation line between salvation and damnation, noting "whom and how you worship now reflects the hope of your eternal destiny."[44] He emphasizes that for worshipers, "the aim of the exercise ought to be to please *God*, not merely entertain the worshiper."[45] Worship must be *upwardly* focused, with Jesus – who is the Way, and the Truth, and the Life – being the foundation of both the church and the believer's life. "It is significant that Jesus spoke of *truth*, not music, as the distinctive mark of true worship (John 4:23-24)."[46]

Jesus famously opined on the difficulty of the rich reaching heaven because they tend to trust in themselves or their wealth. You remember the ease with which camels can go through the eye of a needle in comparison to the wealthy entering heaven. But with God, all things are possible.

MacArthur highlights one One Percenter who won his spiritual race, writing, "Job refused the inclination to worship his material wealth. If you worship what you possess – if you center your life on yourself, your possessions, or even your needs – you have denied God. You have in effect made your possessions your god."[47] God's ire is raised whenever any of His children place anyone or anything above God.

Every single human being is sinful and worships idols, at least until they come to know God and come to their senses (as did the prodigal son). After God draws us to repentance, redeems us from our sinful self, and brings us into a relationship with Him, then we are able to worship Him in spirit and in truth. Thus, "The foundation upon which true worship is based is redemption."[48] MacArthur has identified the distinguishing mark of authentic faith:

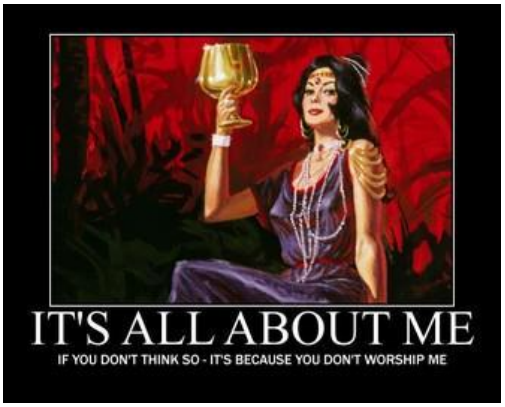
> In spite of what many people nowadays think, the distinguishing mark of authentic faith is not *love* – as if a generic sort of benevolent kindness were unique to Christianity.

---

41 *Ibid*., pg. 41.
42 *Ibid*., pg. 64.
43 *Ibid*., pp. 64-65.
44 John MacArthur, *Worship: The Ultimate Priority*, Moody, 2012, pg. 9.
45 *Ibid*., pg. 10.
46 *Ibid*., pg. 11.
47 *Ibid*., pg. 21.
48 *Ibid*., pg. 53.

> Actually, the true mark of a genuine Christian is that he worships God in the spirit. All other virtues, including the fruit of the Spirit (Galatians 5:22-23), have their roots in worship. Real love begins with love for the true God (1 John 4:7-8). Fullness of joy is found only in Jesus Christ (John 15:11; 17:13). There is no true peace for those who haven't found peace with God (Romans 5:1).[49]

Are we worshiping a false god or a false version of the one and only true God? MacArthur adds, "Fundamentally, idolatry is thinking thoughts about God that are untrue of Him, or entertaining thoughts about Him that are unworthy of Him."[50] If our thoughts or worship of Him are too pedestrian, too casual, too limiting of His unlimited nature, then we see fresh spiritual eyes to see that "His holiness is the crown of all that He is."[51]



As for Coulter, many people (including Coulter) have come to idolize and worship her as if she were perfection personified. Being untouchable and given license to be unrestrained has not helped Coulter. Indeed, failing to hold her accountable for her behavior, to insist that she live by the principles and standards she preaches, to demand a basic level of civility from an acclaimed leader, has not given her the freedom to be the best that she can be but has only enabled her to become the worst that she could be.

John Calvin preached that "Man's nature, so to speak, is a perpetual factory of idols." Authors Mark Driscoll and Gerry Breshears wrote, "as John Calvin rightly said, the human heart is an idol factory. Thankfully, as we seek and smash our idols by the grace of God, our lives are transformed by acts of worship to God's glory, our joy, and others' good …"[52]

Narcissism and self-worship can only be healed by turning one's heart to the only One who can heal!

---

49 *Ibid*., pg. 65.
50 *Ibid*., pg. 81.
51 *Ibid*., pg. 107.
52 Mark Driscoll and Gerry Breshears, *Doctrine: What Christians Should Believe*, Crossway, 2010, pg. 369.

Chapter 3

Pride – All is Vanity

"Vanity dies hard; in some obstinate cases it outlives the man."
– Robert Louis Stevenson

Proud to Be Proud

As we have seen, narcissists are self-oriented, even self-obsessed, and in their self-obsession they can become idols to others and to themselves. Pride is a core attribute of self-idolatry. Pride in one's words, one's works, one's pedigree, one's very being.

Pride is a natural human proclivity and certain ways in which pride is manifested can be healthy. In fact, healthy pride and self-esteem are good things. However, *unhealthy* pride is on the rise. Americans certainly take pride in a whole range of areas, running the gamut from *national* pride, through *ethnic* or *cultural* pride, to *personal* pride.

It has become normative in our culture to see bumper stickers with parents professing pride in their children as honor students, animal lovers taking pride in their pets, or patriotic Americans proud of their personal/ethnic heritage or of their nation. In a flurry of patriotic fervor following 9/11, many flag-waving Americans displayed bumper stickers proclaiming "Pride in Power" and "The Power of Pride." Even behaviors, such as homosexuality, and an endless array of political/social groups express their pride in countless ways.

I have even heard people say, "I'm proud to be proud!" Now that's pride! As with pornography, people know it when they see it, but one thing about pride is that it is so much easier to see it in others and not in oneself.

But Coulter seems to have taken pride to a whole new level, wearing hers almost as a badge of honor, certainly as a means of self-exaltation (and self-assurance).

Perverted Perspective

Like pride, idolatry can be very difficult to discern in one's own life, in part because it distorts our moral and spiritual vision. Like cataracts, idolatry weakens our ability to discern situations accurately, to distinguish between right and wrong, to sense to true nature of who we are. For those who are driven to succeed, evangelist Timothy Keller warns, "Another sign that you have made achievement an idol is that it distorts your view of yourself. When your achievements serve as the basis for your very worth as a person, they can lead you to an inflated view of your abilities."[1]

[1] Timothy Keller, *Counterfeit Gods: The Empty Promises of Money, Sex, and Power, and the Only Hope that Matters*, Dutton, 2009, pg. 76.

Often the successful begin to look to themselves for success, to trust in themselves for their future, and in that process to neglect God and the things of God, which of course include glorifying Him by living godly lives. Moreover, overweening pride in our own accomplishments can inflate our egos so much that we begin to think we know it all. Keller comments on this phenomenon: "If your success is more than just success to you – if it is the measure of your value and worth – then accomplishment in one limited area of life will make you believe you have expertise in all areas."[2]

For some, this ego-boosting exercise may seem like a good thing – especially for those who secretly fear being inadequate or imperfect and, thus, unlovable – but actually having such a flawed view of oneself in relationship to reality and the world can be dangerous and devastating, as explained by Keller: "When an idol gets a grip on your heart, it spins out a whole set of false definitions of success and failure and happiness and sadness. It redefines reality in terms of itself."[3]

What scary imagery: idols griping one's heart!

Truth brings freedom and phony realities enslave. In the end, one's humanity can become inhuman. Again, Keller observes, "To be your own God and live for your own glory and power leads to the most bestial and cruel kind of behavior. Pride makes you a predator, not a person. That is what happened to the king [Nebuchadnezzar]."[4]

Praising Herself (and also John John)

Tragically it appears that Coulter has indeed become her own god and is indeed living for her own glory and power. A few examples should suffice.

In 1999, Coulter admired John F. Kennedy, Jr.'s admiration for *her*, and she said so in her eulogy for the fallen liberal icon (see Chapter 8). Not surprisingly, in addition to being full of acrimony, Coulter's Kennedy eulogy praised Coulter. In one surprising interview, Coulter boasted:

> I really did admire and respect him a lot and … I think what he was doing was very important and that is taking a lot of the acrimony out of political dialogue. For example, by having me write for him and proposing article ideas. He was very enthusiastic about my articles, and I'm a Republican.[5]

Yes, that's right – the deceased heir of Camelot was worthy of admiration and respect because he hired Coulter! [The accompanying photo is of Coulter flirting with the married Kennedy just a few weeks before his death.]

One observer on the Internet wrote: "On 'Rivera Live,' in remembering the universally mourned and missed JFK Jr., she said basically that she admired him for admiring her, for

2 *Ibid*., pg. 76.
3 *Ibid*., pg. 146.
4 *Ibid*., pg. 121.
5 Ann Coulter, *Rivera Live*, CNBC, 7/23/99.

putting HER on the list of George's Most Intriguing People!" He continued, "A purely delusional comment of hers was that JFK Jr. wanted to remove some of the acrimony from politics, by hiring HER! Yeah, right, like she's some soft-tongued kind-hearted soul!"[6]

A Few of Her Favorite Things

In many lists of Coulter's favorite things we often find one common denominator – Coulter. First and foremost on her lists of favorite things is herself.

Just introduced on *Rivera Live* to promote her first very first book, Coulter skirted the host's opening question, boasting, "Yes, I would like to say I'm going to believe only the *Time* magazine polls now, since they cite my book coming out next week with those dazzling endorsements, Geraldo."[7] Then, the following month, when a guest and co-host were cross-talking on *Crossfire*, Coulter *interrupted* the guest, exclaiming, "Wait! He's quoting from my book."[8]

Shamelessly hawking her book on-air quickly became habitual for Coulter. On the *Drudge Report*, Matt Drudge *opened* the show discussing her book.[9] Later in the show, speaking to Congressman Charles Rangel, she advised "I *highly* recommend *this* [her book]" and to Drudge "do you have an extra [copy]?" *Still on-air* she shared her book with the Congressman, *forcing* Drudge to switch to interviewing someone *else* on screen while *they* discussed *her* book. Still later Rangel, the perfect gentleman, complimented Coulter on *High Crimes* and she exclaimed, "I'm glad *someone* is interested in my book."

When asked in 2002,[10] "which writers, journalists, or others" "move you," Coulter replied, "Jesus is my favorite philosopher. Among the sinners, I greatly admire C.S. Lewis, George Orwell, Whittaker Chambers, Ronald Reagan, and Phyllis Schlafly." Coulter then added, "Incidentally, C.S. Lewis's book *The Screwtape Letters* could be about modern liberals in America. The propaganda techniques of liberals and the Prince of Lies are amazingly similar. I highly recommend it, second only to *Slander* [her second book]."

Later, in 2004,[11] Coulter was asked "what three books do you consider essential reading?" Her answer: "The Old Testament, the New Testament, and *Treason*." Yes, her then current [third] best-seller ranked with the Bible.

In a different interview that year,[12] Coulter was asked, "What are the top five books you'd recommend to become an informed voter?" Coulter's humble reply listed the Bible first, followed by her own four books: "*The Bible*, *High Crimes and Misdemeanors*, *Slander*, *Treason*, and *How to Talk to a Liberal (If You Must)*." She ignored the secondary question, "And what can your new book contribute?"

---

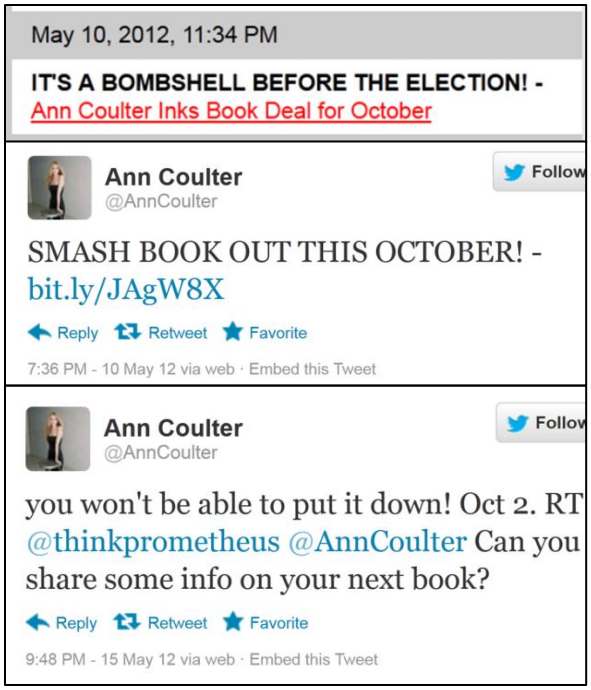
6 Post # 2833, Salon Forum, 7/23/99.
7 Ann Coulter, *Rivera Live*, CNBC, 8/3/98.
8 Ann Coulter, *Crossfire*, CNN, 9/8/98.
9 Matt Drudge, *Drudge Report*, FNC, 8/8/98.
10 Ann Coulter interview, *World* magazine, 10/5/02, http://www.worldmag.com/world/issue/10-05-02/cultural_4.asp.
11 Interview by Jamie Glazov, *Front Page Magazine*, 1/12/04.
12 "Election 2004: The Ann Coulter Interview," Amazon.com, http://www.amazon.com/exec/obidos/tg/feature/-/537452/104-5654028-2056747.

Asked about her book titles in 2011, Coulter replied, "Zippy titles, aren't they?"[13] Responding to a caller's question in that interview, Coulter said, "You need to read my book, *Godless*, where this point is made more pithily, I think."[14] Asked about the process of writing a book, Coulter joked, "It's a lot more fun to read it over and over again if I'm using myself [with her trademark humor]."[15]

Addressing the matter of accuracy and veracity in her work, Coulter claimed that her books "are heavily researched."[16] She further joked, "There have now been Broadway plays written about Ann's *one* error in *a* book!"[17]

Mugged – Pride

With the publication of *Mugged*, the usual conservative memes inhabited the conservative realm: the courageous Ann Coulter fearlessly defends truth, honor, and the American way. The promotional material for *Mugged* boldly stated, "Ann Coulter fearlessly explains the real history of race relations in this country … Going where few authors would dare."[18]



A number of conservatives picked up on this Coulter-generated narrative of Coulter's courage. A Townhall caption to a Coulter video called her a "brave author,"[19] while Sean Hannity claimed she is "fearless."[20] Ditto for the *American Spectator*: "Ann Coulter is fearless."[21]

Marketing herself and her book, Coulter repeatedly insisted that *Mugged* is "IT'S SO GOOD!!!!!!!!!!!!!! it's a blockbuster"[22] and "It's *soooo* good!"[23] Indeed, she insisted it was a "smash book" even before its release. She even claimed her previous book, *Demonic*, was a "smash best-seller."

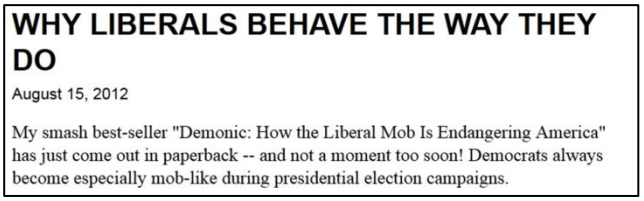
Yet, on the eve of her *Mugged* book tour, Coulter predicted that the Mainstream Media would ignore her book in deference to Obama, as if she *deserved* to be featured on network news programs.[24] On the eve of her Mugged book tour, Coulter made a similar claim that her previous book, *Demonic*, was a "smash best-seller," charging "I'm apparently not allowed to go on *any* NBC program. They're afraid of me, as well they should be."[25]

---

13 Ann Coulter, *In Depth*, C-Span, 8/7/11.
14 *Ibid*.
15 *Ibid*.
16 *Ibid*.
17 *Ibid*.
18 Promotional material for *Mugged*.
19 Video caption, Townhall, 9/27/12, http://townhall.com/video/ann-coulter-on-the-view. Also, "The brave author talks about her book and gets lectured by Whoopi Goldberg about not knowing what it's like to be black." – *The Blaze*, 9/27/12.
20 Sean Hannity, *Sean Hannity Radio Show*, Premiere Radio Networks, 9/28/12.
21 Jeffrey Lord, "*Mugged*: Ann Coulter's Home Run," *American Spectator*, 9/27/12.
22 Katie Pavlich, "Ann Coulter Takes on Obama's Racial Demagoguery in Mugged," *Townhall*, 7/10/12, http://townhall.com/tipsheet/katiepavlich/2012/07/10/exclusive_ann_coulter_takes_on_obamas_racial_demagoguery_in_mugged.
23 Ann Coulter, *Hannity*, FNC, 8/2/12.
24 Ann Coulter, *Sean Hannity Radio Show*, Premiere Radio Networks, 9/24/12.
25 Ann Coulter, *In Depth*, C-Span, 8/7/11.

Recipe for disaster: Take one best-selling author, mix with delusions of grandeur and delusions of persecution, and *Voila*! Idols gripping one's heart!

Pharisees – Pride


WHY LIBERALS BEHAVE THE WAY THEY DO

August 15, 2012

My smash best-seller "Demonic: How the Liberal Mob Is Endangering America" has just come out in paperback -- and not a moment too soon! Democrats always become especially mob-like during presidential election campaigns.

The Pharisees were the political and religious leaders of their day. They were also regarded, in some sense, as rock stars in that they were the public intellectuals of their time. Coulter has a great deal of pride in her ideological and religious pedigree, in her beauty and her brains, in her résumé and her resources. Coulter claims to have the perfect family, perfect parents, etc.

Among her claims, her family is **prototypically conservative** ("*Yes* [I'm from a long line of conservatives]. As far as I know I have *no* ancestors who voted for *FDR*"),[26] has the **perfect father** ("My father is as right-wing as they come"),[27] her **perfect mother** ("Everyone wanted my mother to be his mother"),[28] she is the **prototype blonde pundit** ("Originally, I was the only female with long blonde hair. Now, they all have long blond hair,")[29] she is the **quintessential Christian** ("I am as born again evangelical Christian as they come,")[30] she is the **model pro-lifer** ("I am totally pro-life,")[31] and she is the **most unpublished writer** ("I am one of the most unpublished writers in America – except for my books, which sell pretty well.")[32]

Implying she is the best political commentator, Coulter even proudly disavows the support of her *allies*: "There are so few people who can defend a position – *any* position – that it is a *miracle* to find a politician who can do so. Speaking for myself, about half the time I'm on television I could do without my alleged allies and that figure rises to about 99% when my alleged allies are politicians. As you listen to them walking through the RNC talking points *de jour*, you just want to shout – 'Step *aside*! Let the *professionals* handle this!'[33] Some professional. Some conservative.

The Pharisees were legalistic, judgmental and self-righteous. They *loved honor*. They *sought adulation*. Pride *welled up* within them. We see those very traits within the body of Coulter's work as she shows disdain for others and self-satisfaction with herself.

Just as the Pharisees were the political, moral, and spiritual elites of their day, proud that they were better than others, one can easily imagine Coulter waking up every day praising God that she is not like *others*. One recalls the parable of the Pharisee and the tax collector[34] in which both were praying in the temple. The tax collector, who were regarded as among the worst sinners, was humble and contrite while the Pharisee boasted to himself and to God, "God, I thank You that I am not like other men – extortioners, unjust, adulterers, or even as this tax collector. [12] I fast twice a week; I give tithes of all that I possess."

Jesus' judgment on the matter? "I tell you, this man went down to his house justified rather than the other; for everyone who exalts himself will be humbled, and he who humbles himself will be exalted."

---

26 Ann Coulter, *Vantage Points: Issues for Women*, Amazon City Radio, 12/5/97.
27 *Ibid*.
28 Ann Coulter, "Nell Husbands Martin Coulter," 4/22/09.
29 Vincent Morris, "Wanna Be a Political Pundit? Being Blonde & Beautiful Helps," *Capitol Hill Blue*, 6/6/00.
30 Ann Coulter, CPAC, 2/12/11.
31 Emily Freund, "Ann Coulter: She May Be Right …" *Westchester WAG*, October 2002.
32 Ann Coulter, *How to Talk to a Liberal (If You Must): The World According to Ann Coulter*, Crown Forum, 2004, pg. 17.
33 Ann Coulter, YAF's 22nd Annual National Conservative Student Conference, 7/20/00.
34 Luke 18:9-14. Jesus described Himself as "gentle and lowly in heart" (Mt. 11:29) and told His disciples that "whoever humbles himself as this little child is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven" (Mt. 18:4).

Impenitent Imperfection

We have seen, time and time again, that Coulter is unwilling to admit error, to accept correction, to repent of wrong behavior, just as the Pharisees in their pride were unable to accept correction and to admit error. (Indeed, they even hated Jesus and others who *exposed* their wrong behavior!) Their self-righteousness required them to be perfect in the eyes of others. Indeed, their pride and self-righteousness created at least a subconscious belief that they were perfect (at least, as perfect as humans can be). So, too, with Coulter, who despises imperfections in others, yet pretends to perfection in her own life.

Those who know Ann Coulter best know that she *will not* admit error. It is not within her to reveal her own imperfections (however much she may expose the imperfections of others). Brent Bozell wrote: "An essential principle of Clintonism, in addition to the truth-twisting wordplay, is the absolutely shameless refusal to admit fault."[35]

An interesting exchange on MSNBC highlighted Coulter's inability to see herself for who she really is. She said, "No, New Year's has never really been that big [for me]. I never really understood this idea of taking an accounting of your life, and now a big accounting of your life when you see three zeroes [2,000]. … So I don't really understand either the New Year's generally or the year 2000."[36]

Coulter *can't comprehend* people taking an accounting of their lives. She has no time for self-*evaluation*, for character *reformation*. [Of course, if one is perfect one doesn't need to engage in such pointless pursuits.]

However, "perfection" is its own reward, yet, when that perfection is an illusion (and isn't it *always* an illusion?), it becomes a stumbling block. "Perfect" people can't make *mistakes*. "Perfect" people can't be *wrong*. "Perfect" people can't admit error, can't *apologize*. "Perfect" people can't be *im*perfect lest they shatter their own *illusion* of perfection.

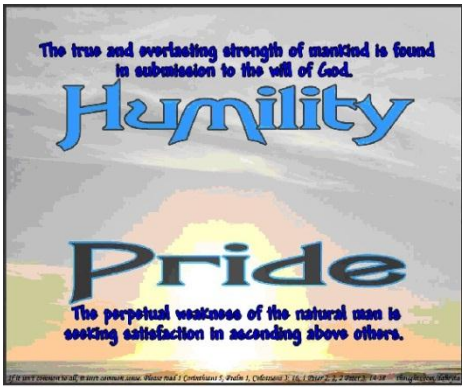
Perils of Pride

Many theologians and church leaders view pride as the *central* sin of the Bible. They see pride as the *origin* of all other sins. Even if one doesn't accept this view, one must accept that the Scriptures condemn pride throughout its pages. Paul warns "those who are self-seeking and do not obey the truth, but obey unrighteousness – [will receive] indignation and wrath," (Rom. 2:8) and advised "Let nothing be done through selfish ambition or conceit, but in lowliness of mind let each esteem others better than himself" (Phil. 2:3). The prophets of old gave a complementary message: "The pride of your heart has deceived you" (Obad. 3).

The Book of Proverbs is replete with warnings against pride: "When pride comes, then comes shame; but with the humble is wisdom" (11:2), "By pride comes only contention, but with the well-advised is wisdom" (13:10), "The Lord will destroy the house of the proud, but He will establish the boundary of the widow" (15:25), "Everyone who is proud in heart is an abomination to the

[35] L. Brent Bozell III, "Clintonism Defined," 9/14/00..
[36] Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 4/6/97.

Lord; though they join forces, none will go unpunished" (16:5), "Pride goes before destruction, and a haughty spirit before a fall. Better to be a humble spirit with the lowly, than to divide the spoil with the proud" (16:18-19), "Before destruction the heart of a man is haughty, and before honor is humility" (18:12), "A haughty look, a proud heart, and the plowing of the wicked are sin" (21:4), "It is not good to eat too much honey; so to seek one's own glory is not glory" (25:27), "A man's pride will bring him low, but the humble in spirit will retain honor" (29:23), and "If you have been foolish in exalting yourself, or if you have devised evil, put your hand on your mouth" (30:32).



As St. John Chrysostom observed: "Humility is the root, mother, nurse, foundation, and bond of all virtue." Pride actually works *against* virtue, *corrupting* character and virtue.

Power of Humility

Dr. R.T. Kendall has written a fascinating book entitled *The Power of Humility*.[37] For a Christian, its subtitle – *Living Like Jesus* – should provoke one to self-examination and spiritual renewal.

In his book, Kendall observes, "Prideful people resent criticism, are insecure, cannot laugh at themselves, need praise constantly, see themselves as overly important, fancy themselves as being very special to God, tend to blame others for their problems, cannot bear not getting credit for the good they did, and, lastly, have an insatiable need to prove themselves."[38] Kendall notes that "Pride is the essence of sin," and he emphasizes that pride is "self-centeredness, the desire to get the credit, and the insatiable need to have praise from people."

The subtitle (and contents of) Coulter's fourth book, "*The World According to Ann Coulter*," eschews humility. In contrast, Jesus, the Savior and Ruler of the world, came in humility as a helpless Babe and "He humbled Himself," as Paul writes, "and became obedient to *the point of* death, even the death of the cross" (Phil. 2:8).

King David's heartfelt prayer of repentance observed, "The sacrifices of God *are* a broken spirit, a broken and a contrite heart – these, O God, You will not despise" (Ps. 51:17). The apostle James encourages us to "Humble yourselves in the sight of the Lord, and He will lift you up" (Jas. 4:10), as does Peter, "Therefore humble yourselves under the mighty hand of God, that He may exalt you in due time," (1st Pet. 5:6). But they were merely echoing the thoughts of Jesus: "And whoever exalts himself will be humbled, and he who humbles himself will be exalted" (Mt. 23:12).

Narcissists are proud (even when their pride is masked by charm and grace). Further, narcissists tend to be prejudiced since, after all, they think they are better than other people, superior, among the best and the brightest, and, thus, other people are their inferiors (see next chapter).

---

37 R.T. Kendall, *The Power of Humility: Living Like Jesus*, Charisma House, 2011.
38 R.T. Kendall, "Overcoming Pride," *Focus on the Family*, WAVA, 8/31/12.

Chapter 4

Prejudice

"Pride that dines on vanity, sups on contempt." – *Benjamin Franklin*

Scornful Polemicist

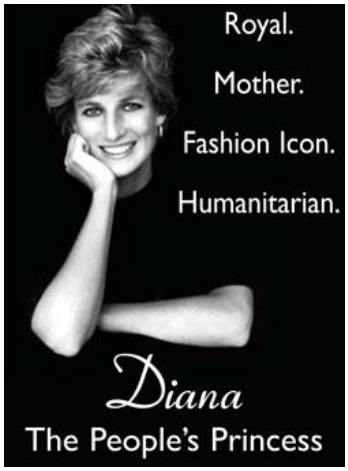
Narcissists who become idolized and become idols to themselves inevitably develop over-preening pride in themselves and contempt for others. Early in her media career, her friend Geraldo Rivera asked her, "Why are you always so scornful of everybody else's opinion? Why?"[1]

Coulter actually *answered* that question! "Because …"

The reason for Coulter's scorn of others: "It's because the five same statements are made every single program." Coulter didn't *deny* but *defended* her scorn. Her defense? Clinton apologists kept making the *same* arguments and she *disagreed* with those arguments. (Doesn't Coulter repeat her own arguments on multiple talk shows?)

There's a reason polemics come so easily for Coulter. She looks down on so many people. Coulter typically denigrates specific individuals (even if she does not know them). For instance, she burst out, "Hang on! Back down! Look, would you two hatchet women back off for five minutes! I can't even finish a statement."[2] Hatchet women? Coulter's ill-disguised contempt for specific *individuals* in *particular* is paralleled by similar views of *humanity* as a *whole*. According to Coulter, "humans are fascist by nature," with an "instinct to fascism,"[3] and "humans are stupid."[4]

The People's Princess



While the world was mourning the unexpected death of Princess Diana, Coulter could not contain her scorn, calling the "People's Princess" an "unfit mother" and "round heel" who was "ordinary and pathetic and confessional."[5]

Rev. Anne Robertson believes that "Diana was so beloved as 'the people's princess' precisely because she had love and empathy for those 'beneath' her station."[6] According to Robertson, "the question for Ann Coulter is not 'Why do you think so highly of yourself?' (which can be answered by the kinds of things Borchers lists and which would probably be true of many celebrities) but rather 'Why are you so mean?'"

One talk radio host suggested to me that perhaps Coulter has such a deep-seated antipathy to Diana precisely because "she is a polar opposite [to Coulter] in every way. Where Coulter hates, Diana loved; where Coulter thinks, Diana felt and expressed; where Diana evoked love, Coulter evokes fear."[7]

---

1 *Rivera Live*, CNBC, 2/4/99.
2 Ann Coulter, *Rivera Live*, CNBC, 2/4/99.
3 Ann Coulter, "Air Travel Made Unpleasant By Overbearing Personnel," 8/4/99.
4 Ann Coulter, Political Malpractice," 10/6/99
5 Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 9/12/97.
6 Author interview.
7 Author interview.

From my vantage point, there are three principal possibilities for Coulter's enmity directed specifically toward Diana. First, Diana found a way to deal with her narcissism, bulimia, broken marriage, and emotional problems by going public ("confessional" in Coulter's words), admitting her weaknesses and vulnerabilities, and reaching out to others to help them – all of which Coulter seems incapable of doing. (If she can't admit her our weaknesses to *herself*, how can she do so to others, especially so publicly?) (If Coulter so despises weakness in others, what must she think of her *own* weaknesses?)

Second, Diana was loved for having the courage to do what Coulter cannot, or will not, do. Finally, Coulter hates those things in Diana – narcissism, emotional insecurities, vulnerabilities, etc. – that she sees in herself (or others have ascribed to her)! (Again, if Coulter so despises weakness in others, what must she think of her own weaknesses?)

To answer Robertson's more general question – "Why are you so mean?" – leads me to two interrelated answers. First, if a narcissist looks down on another person as an inferior, unworthy of their time, enmity can emerge, leading to meanness toward the person scorned. Second, being mean for meanness's sake can bring the narcissist joy, but, more importantly, it can instill fear in the victim (and others who could become victims) and thus lead to control by the narcissist.

Vilification of Todd Akin

Yes, it's official! Coulter has hatred. Coulter said, "I'm glad that I didn't do the interview yesterday. I didn't want to be on radio yesterday because I couldn't officially hate Todd Akin until the 5 p.m. deadline. Once he refused to resign — not even resign. He doesn't hold the office — to withdraw as the candidate. Now I can officially hate him. … Now I officially hate him."[8]

But, Akin is a pro-life candidate with a 100% conservative rating from the American Conservative Union, which gave him a "Defender of Liberty award" for his "outstanding records in support of conservative principles on a wide range of issues of concern to grass roots conservatives in 2009." David A. Keene, Chairman of the ACU, noted that Akin is trying to preserve "the fundamental principles on which the American system of government."

Ironically, one of the most deliberately controversial and polemical pundits in history castigated a fellow conservative for being accidentally divisive.

Surprisingly, Coulter, who labeled Sarah Palin and the GOP a "party of charlatans," and claimed Romney is the most conservative candidate, really did condemn Akin as one who must be hated for being genuinely pro-life and truly conservative. In the end, having been shunned by Coulter and establishment Republicans, Akin lost – and Coulter blamed Akin for *Romney's* loss.

[8] Ann Coulter, *Sean Hannity Radio Show*, Premiere Radio Networks, 8/22/12.

Mocking Sandra Fluke and Other Liberals

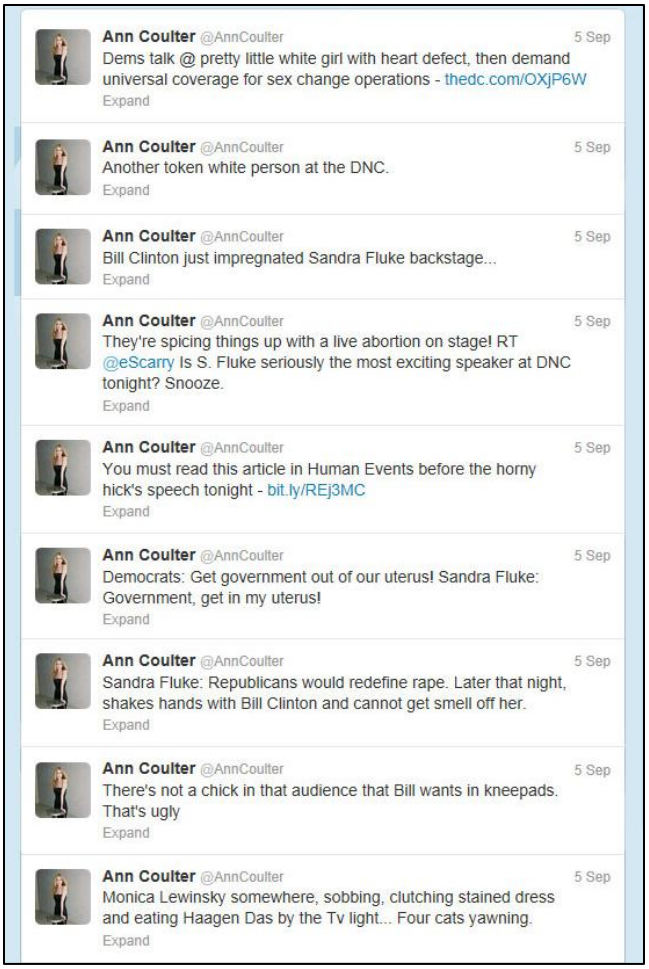
In 2012, liberal feminist and activist Sandra Fluke entered the national stage when she advocated in favor of contraceptives being provided by the government/health insurance.

In a radio interview, Coulter mocked Fluke's name, saying, "They keep calling her Sandra 'Fl-uck' on MSNBC. I think they think it sounds better than Sandra 'Fluke,' but I think Sandra 'Fl-uck' sounds like a Chinese aphrodisiac."[9] Calling Fluke an "hysterical drama queen," complaining about being attacked by her critics, Coulter countered that conservatives are not "pussies like them. We don't care what names we're called. We all stop whining and weeping and, 'Oh he called me a name.'"

But of course Coulter would say that! Name-calling is de rigueur for Coulter. Continuing her attack, Coulter said, "No, these people inject themselves into some national dialogue. They're criticized, then they run around claiming to be martyrs for having their voices silenced."

Having mocked Fluke's name, ideology, and character, Coulter then criticized her voice, saying, "Why is her voice being silenced? … It's as if — Could you write it down for us? That screechy voice of yours, you're sounding like Sarah Palin. Just write it down for us. It's the voice we can't take."[10]

(In just a few months Coulter would claim her own voice was being silenced by a conspiracy of the mainstream media to ignore her book, *Mugged*.)



During the Republican National Convention (yes, Coulter was in attendance), Coulter tweeted vulgarities (often about Fluke) which have yet to be condemned by conservatives (see sidebar graphic). Just the opposite has taken place. Coulter's commentary and vulgarity is *lauded* by some conservatives.

Yes, the Slut Factor, courtesy of Coulter, entered the national dialogue.

---

9 Jeff Poor, "Coulter rips Fluke, cautions conservatives on reactions: 'We're not pussies like them,'" *Daily Caller*, 3/21/12, http://dailycaller.com/2012/03/21/coulter-rips-fluke-cautions-conservatives-on-reactions-were-not-pussies-like-them/.

10 Tea Party members should ask why Coulter continues to take back-handed swipes at Palin. Doesn't Coulter like the Tea Party? Didn't she write an essay on Palin for *Time* magazine's Top 100 and another on Palin as "Conservative of the Year' for *Human Events*? Perhaps Coulter really is a moderate, establishment Republican, as a growing number of people have come to suspect.

Off With Their Heads

Narcissists who are filled with pride, who view others with scorn, and who eagerly express enmity toward foes, tend to *dehumanize* those foes, saying, "they're like my pets."[11] Once a hated foe has been demonized and dehumanized, it is just one more step to determine that they are worthy of death.

One grim disappointment in *Mugged* is Coulter's continued employment of elimination rhetoric. In the first instance, after extensively addressing the background and dynamics of Jim Jones and his suicidal cult, Coulter wrote of the massacre itself and she suggested that the liberal politicians pandering to Jones should have been victims themselves in the tragedy. She wrote, "Sadly, none of these elected Democrats accompanied the Peoples Temple to Guyana [to be massacred by Jim Jones]."[12]

In the second instance, Coulter dwelt on an edited tape of the Rodney King beating which ultimately fomented race riots and provided a pattern for future racial demagoguery. Coulter wrote:

> Every single member of the crack KTLA news team that deliberately fed the public the misinformation that led to this carnage [L.A. riots in the wake of the Rodney King verdict] ought to spend the rest of his life looking over his shoulder, worried about a relative of Reginald Denny or a financially ruined Korean sneaking up on him.
>
> But far from hiding, the people responsible for the misleading [Rodney King] tape brag about their Peabody Award. At least we have their names.[13]

Coulter then *named* them![14] (She had previously defended an anti-abortion website which published the names and addresses of abortionists despite the danger of instigating an assassination.) Perhaps instilling fear is the whole point of Coulter's exercise! Some people fear the wrath of Coulter's words. They fear her power and willingness to misuse that power.

Dr. Sam Vaknin observes, "Hate is the complement of fear and narcissists like being feared. It imbues them with an intoxicating sensation of omnipotence."[15]

Nothing and no one is off limits. For Coulter, it's even alright to "go after" the children!

Ann Coulter Suggests It's "Time" Conservatives "Go After The Obama Children"

POSTED BY ELLEN ·22PC ON MARCH 22, 2012 · FLAG

During yet ANOTHER Hannity segment on liberal hypocrisy about personal attacks, Sean Hannity teamed up with Ann Coulter – an expert on personal attacks if ever there was one – to use the topic as little more than another excuse for a round of attacks on liberals. The thinking seemed to be: liberals are awful so we're cleared for being as awful as possible to them. But Coulter outdid herself by suggesting that it would be liberals' just desserts if conservatives "go after the Obama children."

The part about going after the Obama children was just one part of a load of Hannity-show hypocrisy. It started with attacks on Sandra Fluke – as if she hasn't been smeared enough by the right already.

"Here's something you and I agree on," Hannity said to Coulter. "Conservatives – they're not offended by all this stuff with Bill Maher." But Hannity went on to say that he *is* offended (and Fox News regularly refers to Maher as "Pig Maher" online). Then he accused liberals of "feigning outrage" at Rush Limbaugh. "I don't think people are as outraged as they act," Hannity said, as Coulter nodded her phony blonde tresses vigorously.

Well, it takes one to know one. Hannity's own phony-baloney Hanctimony was hilariously exposed by Jon Stewart not long ago.

---

11 George Gurley, "Ann Coulter Ecstatic: Enemies Stoke Sales – 'They're Like My Pets,'" *New York Observer*, 7/2/06, http://www.observer.com/node/39091.

12 Ann Coulter, *Mugged: Racial Demagoguery From the Seventies to Obama*, Sentinel, 2012, pg. 85.

13 *Ibid*., pg. 123.

14 *Ibid*., pp. 123-124.

15 Dr. Sam Vaknin, *Malignant Self-Love: Narcissism Revisited*, Narcissus Publications, 1991, 2001, 2003.

Feeling superior to others and having scorn for others, leads to hatred, condemnation, and elimination rhetoric – all Coulter hallmarks.

Mugged with Extreme Prejudice

The eminent and inestimable Thomas Sowell, whom I have cited in the past and will certainly do so again in the future, is perhaps the foremost authority on race. Sowell has prodigiously praised Coulter's latest best-seller, *Mugged*, for speaking the truth on racial demagoguery. However, there are serious flaws in her analysis. Just as the theme of Coulter's *Demonic* was based on a flawed premise,[16] so, too, is *Mugged*, which posits that civil rights are *only* for blacks![17]

For a cultural commentator who extols a "colorless society," Coulter is at times color obsessed.

Although she is a self-described constitutional attorney who worked as a litigator for the Center for Individual Rights and has been the Legal Editor and the Legal Affairs Correspondent for *Human Events* since the mid-1990s, on the eve of her book tour for *Mugged*, Coulter was surprisingly inarticulate and inartful when discussing civil rights, "one of the most important points of [her] book."[18] Indeed, her words were astonishing!

Coulter claimed, "civil rights are for blacks." Her reasoning? "We owe black people something, we have the legacy of slavery." In contrast, "We don't owe the homeless. We don't owe feminists. We don't owe women who are desirous of having abortions, or gays who want to get married to one another."

A constitutional attorney should know better!

Consider, Coulter correlates civil rights with *victimization*, a bizarre formulation on its face.[19] Further, she asserts that America "owes blacks" for slavery, a claim which is invalidated by history and contrary to her own views from over 15 years ago, when she said:

> I don't understand the principle under which I'm supposed to be responsible for what some white people may have done six generations back. I mean, on that theory we oughta be punishing the children of criminals. We don't even hold one – the next generation – responsible for what that person's precise father did, much less some white guy 200 years ago.[20]

---

16 For a succinct analysis of the main flaws in Coulter's eighth book, *Demonic*, see chapter "Chapter 10: Taking a *Demonic* Turn," in my free PDF book, *The Beauty of Conservatism*, which is available for download at www.CoulterWatch.com/beauty.pdf.

17 For more on Coulter's sometimes bizarre formulations on race, class, and gender, see chapter "Chapter 10: Equality: Self-Evident Truths," in my free PDF book, The Gospel According to Ann Coulter, which is available for download at www.CoulterWatch.com/gospel.pdf.

18 Ann Coulter, *This Week with George Stephanopoulos*, ABC, 9/23/12.

19 For a refutation of victimology and the rationale for Coulter's embrace of it, see chapter "Chapter 6: I Am Victim, Hear Me Whine," in my free PDF book, *The Beauty of Conservatism*, which is available for download at www.CoulterWatch.com/beauty.pdf.

20 Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 6/14/97.

Indeed, even in *Mugged* she condemned the notion of America's indebtedness to blacks for slavery: "This is the quasi-theological underpinning of the modern welfare state."[21] Then why is she so *confused*? According to Coulter, civil rights are *rightly* based on race and the legacy of slavery but the modern welfare state is *wrongly* based on race and the legacy of slavery.

Human rights, such as life, liberty, and the pursuit of happiness (see the Declaration of Independence), are *universal* rights applicable to all people everywhere and granted to them by God, not government. *Civil* rights are those guaranteed by the Constitution and are applicable to American citizens and legal residents, but not to those who illegally reside in America, those who are part of the nation's social compact. In other words, civil rights are derived from one's citizenship or legal residence, while human rights are universal, endowed to every human being.

Civil rights are not, as Coulter contends, a function of *victimization*, but rather the consequence of a *compact* between citizens within a nation. For instance, the Constitution provides the foundation for *our* civil rights, with equal protections to all under the law. One could say these civil rights *complement* our universal human rights.

Some groups push for *special* rights (e.g., gay marriage) which are <u>not</u> recognized by the Constitution and which have throughout human history been regarded as neither normative nor universal. Illegal aliens, by definition, are not part of the societal compact.

Strangely, while Coulter seems correct in her analysis of race relations in America today, the foundational premise of her book is illogical and incorrect.

Readers of *Mugged* could naturally conclude that she is railing against special rights for politically correct groups, even though she never uses the term.

Claiming that civil rights are only for blacks and that they were created as a result of victimization is ludicrous. In America, the Civil Rights Movement began in the late 1780s and the first Freedom Riders promoted the Bill of Rights which recognized civil rights based largely upon citizenship to *prevent* victimization, not *because* of it.

Coulter frequently cites the 13th, 14th, and 15th Amendments to the Constitution, as well as the Civil Rights Act of 1964, none of which claim that civil rights are for blacks only. Rather, they apply to *all citizens* of the United States. The Civil Rights Act of 1964 does not *limit* civil rights to blacks (it doesn't even use the word "blacks"), but actually *prohibits* discrimination based on "race, color, religion, sex, or national origin," a pretty all-encompassing cohort of the population.

The Amendments and Act Coulter refers to were designed to *include* blacks – and others – into the pool of individuals whose civil rights are guaranteed. Coulter seemed to understand this in 1997, when she commended California's Proposition 209[22] "to prohibit racial discrimination, much like the equal protection clause under the Civil Rights Act."[23]

---

21 Ann Coulter, *Mugged: Racial Demagoguery From the Seventies to Obama*, Sentinel, 2012, pg. 13.
22 Proposition 209 was modeled on, and mirrored, the Civil Rights Act of 1964.
23 Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 4/12/97.

Constitutional scholar Edward J. Erler points out, "A majority of the [Supreme] Court now seems to accept the idea that equal protection rights belong to individuals and not to groups – that equal protection rights are not conditioned by racial or ethnic class considerations."[24] "In agreeing to join civil society," says Erler, "each individual freely accepts the obligation to protect the rights of fellow citizens in return for the protection of his own rights."

Erler continues: "Equal rights – life, liberty, and the pursuit of happiness – derive from 'the laws of nature and of nature's God.' Equal protection of those rights is the very definition of the rule of law" and, consequently, is "intrinsic both to the social compact and to the Constitution." Erler observes that the Civil Rights Act of 1866, and the fourteenth Amendment which arose from it, "protected the rights of 'citizens of every race and color.'"[25]

Moreover, when did conservatives embrace group rights over individual rights? Until the late twentieth century, American jurisprudence recognized rights as being resident in individuals, not *groups*. Coulter's former employer, the Center for *Individual* Rights, certainly thinks so.[26]

Bizarre Czar of the Universe

But Coulter has had a skewed view of race throughout her celebrity career. In 2000, Coulter – using a power paradigm of being an imaginary "czar of the universe" – would *still* discriminate on the basis of race. At a leadership conference, Coulter said,

> Every once in a while I sit back and think what the world would be like if I were *czar*. And, *if* I were czar, I think my position would be that private institutions can do whatever they want to do and only the *government* can't discriminate. … If I were czar of the universe, I would say that a private organization can do whatever it wants to, and, *yes*, it can discriminate on the base of race.[27]

On a more substantive point, for a conservative professing abhorrence of racism and racial discrimination, this view should be anathema. Yet, she has held this view – in the context of her being "czar of the universe" – more than once.

> But if I were the czar of the universe, she would be allowed to get away with it … I think a teacher or a school ought to be able to … on the basis of gender, race, the color of their hair. As long as it's not the government, I think a private university ought to be able to do whatever it wants to.[28]

---

24 Edward J. Erler, "Is the Constitution Colorblind?" *Imprimis*, Hillsdale College, November 2012, pp. 2-3.

25 *Ibid*., pg. 4.

26 During her short time at CIR, Coulter was involved in and aware of civil rights cases combating racial preferences which violated the rights of individuals in non-minority populations.

27 Ann Coulter, Leadership Seminar, Clare Booth Luce Policy Institute, 6/12/00.

28 Ann Coulter, *Politically Incorrect*, ABC, 3/12/99.

This is quite different from what Coulter *used* to say, prior to her rise to fame. Coulter used to condemn *any* form of discrimination and constantly cited *her* law firm's anti-discrimination cases to bolster her credentials. At that time she postured being little freedom-loving David fighting the Goliath of government race preferences. Then she said, "It seems to me my law firm is the only one standing up *against* discrimination on the basis of race." Of course, at that time, she was employed by the firm fighting those battles.

Pharisees – Prejudice

When Jesus walked this Earth, the Pharisees presided over a political and religious system which was legalistic and judgmental. As a consequence of their positions and power, they developed self-righteous attitudes and were filled with a sense of superiority. They were prejudiced, looking down on others who did not measure up to their standards, who failed to observe their rules perfectly, who did not have the right credentials and background. People were excluded because of their race (Samaritan), their gender (female), and their class (poor). Consequently, the Pharisees became full of hatred and promoted that hatred, in essence becoming hatemongers.

Jesus spoke a parable (Luke 18:9-14) "to some who trusted in themselves that they were righteous, and despised others."

> Two men went up to the temple to pray, one a Pharisee and the other a tax collector. The Pharisee stood and prayed thus with himself, "God, I thank You that I am not like other men—extortioners, unjust, adulterers, or even as this tax collector. I fast twice a week; I give tithes of all that I possess." And the tax collector, standing afar off, would not so much as raise his eyes to heaven, but beat his breast, saying, "God, be merciful to me a sinner."

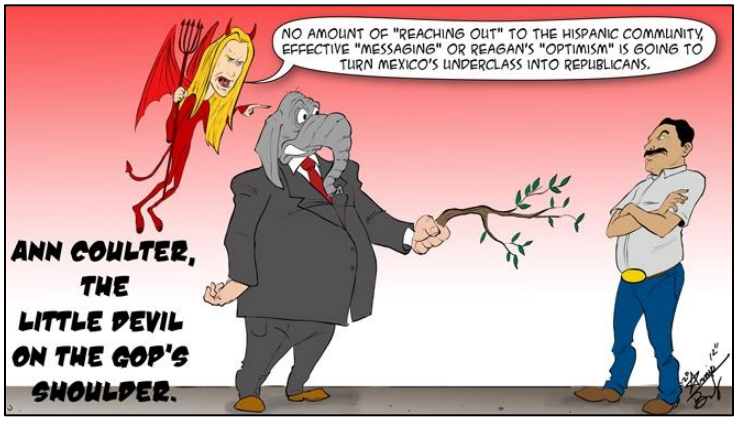
Jesus concluded his parable with an admonishment for the Pharisee: "I tell you, this man went down to his house justified rather than the other; for everyone who exalts himself will be humbled, and he who humbles himself will be exalted."

The Gospel of Luke (7:36-50) also contains a poignant story from which we can glean much. On this occasion, a Pharisee named Simon asked Jesus to dine with him. During dinner an extraordinary thing happened: a woman known to be a sinner entered the house uninvited, came to Jesus, washed His feet with her tears and wiped them with her hair, and then kissed His feet and anointed them with costly oil. During this lengthy process, Simon looked at Jesus with puzzlement (and probably scorn) because He had not rebuked the notorious sinner.

As He so often did, Jesus used a practical example to put things into perspective for this puzzled Pharisee who felt contempt for *that* woman: a certain creditor had two debtors, one with a large debt and the other with a much smaller one. Neither man could repay his debt so the creditor forgave them both. Jesus asked

His host which one loved the forgiving creditor more. Simon replied, "I suppose the one whom he forgave more." Telling Simon that he was correct, Jesus explained, "Therefore, I say to you, her sins, which are many, are forgiven, for she loved much. But to whom little is forgiven, the same loves little."

Apparently one who neither recognizes a need for forgiveness, nor receives it, therefore "loves little." Narcissists who believe themselves superior to others (and entitled to all that they themselves possess and more) quickly fall prey to *contempt* for others and may very well mistreat others in an inhumane manner. From the perspective of the victim of hatred and prejudice, Shakespeare put it so well in *The Merchant of Venice*: "If you prick us, do we not bleed? if you tickle us, do we not laugh? if you poison us, do we not die?"[29]



Many observers have noted Coulter's eagerness to call liberals evil and to employ elimination rhetoric. Timothy Keller notes, "Another sign of idolatry in our politics is that opponents are not considered to be simply mistaken, but to be evil."[30] In book after book, essay after essay, interview after interview, Coulter asserts that liberals are evil or insane – or both!

Pharisees – Bluebloods, Elitism and Pedigrees

The Pharisees came from the priestly tribe, were highly-esteemed, rich and powerful leaders of the community, responsible for both religious and civil issues.

We know that Coulter is extremely proud of her *ancestral lineage* which goes back *beyond* the Revolutionary War to the Puritans planting colonies in America. She is also proud of her *socio-economic* pedigree, being raised in the wealthiest county in America, with parents who could easily afford to pay for her to attend two prestigious universities. Coulter proudly proclaims a *conservative* pedigree: "*Yes* [I'm from a long line of conservatives]. As far as I know I have *no* ancestors who voted for FDR. … My father is as right-wing as they come."[31]

In a debate with the Pharisees, interestingly just *after* Jesus had forgiven the woman caught in adultery, and while He was proclaiming liberty and truth, the Pharisees proclaimed their *religious pedigree* as descendants of the patriarch, Abraham. Jesus corrected them: "I know that you are Abraham's descendants, but you seek to kill Me, because My word has no place in you. ... If you were Abraham's children, you would do the works of Abraham."[32]

Jesus observed that though *genealogically* they had a priestly lineage going back to Abraham, *spiritually* they were children of the devil, because God's Word had "no place in" their lives.

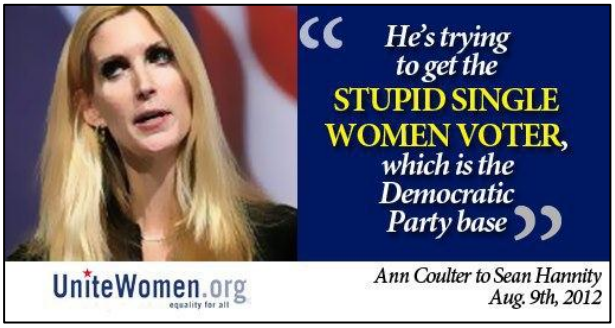
The Pharisees' religious pedigree was polluted by their own evil words and works.

---

29 William Shakespeare, *The Merchant of Venice*, Act 3, Scene 1.
30 Timothy Keller, *Counterfeit Gods: The Empty Promises of Money, Sex, and Power, and the Only Hope that Matters*, Dutton, 2009, pg. 99.
31 Ann Coulter, *Vantage Points: Issues for Women*, Amazon City Radio, 12/5/97.
32 John 8:37, 39.

Neither ideas nor character are dynastic. We find in *any* royal line some good kings, some bad. The same for the Vatican: good and bad popes. Every family has its share of saints and sinners, black sheep and white knights.

Americans rejected monarchy with a Revolution, but retained vestiges of elitism. We have our own American aristocracy. Old money and bluebloods remain important in American politics and society. The right credential, the Old School Tie, networking, and the like. Modern political dynasties include the Kennedys on the Left and the Bushes on the Right.



Author Norman Podhoretz recently observed that America was founded with the intent to create "a society in which hereditary status and class distinctions would be erased, leaving individuals free to act and to be judged on their merits alone."[33] Yet it is precisely Coulter's puritanical pedigree and her elitist roots which compel her to look down upon those who she regards as her inferiors.

Coulter considers herself one of Us (the credentialed and entitled elite), so she is not one of Them (regular folks trying to live are lives as we walk with God). Claiming equality before the law, Coulter considers herself *above* the law. Claiming the equality of all as children of God created in His image, she nevertheless believes she's *better* than the rest.

October Baby

The 2011 hit movie, *October Baby*, is surely one a pro-lifer can love. Hannah, a 19-year-old college freshman with chronic physical and psychological conditions, discovers that she is adopted because she is the survivor of the botched abortion of her birth mother. In her emotional and spiritual journey for truth and peace, Hannah confronts her biological mother and her past in order to discover who she is and her role in life.

One line is particularly profound, "To be human is to be beautifully flawed." Lest we forget, recall the journalist who profiled Coulter and noted so presciently that "she seems to despise weakness of any kind." Weaknesses, flaws, sins – these are anathema to Coulter even as she denies their existence in her life – and doing so because she fears her imperfections would make her unlovable.

The producers, directors, writers, cast, and crew of *October Baby* are especially concerned with promoting the *value of every single human life*.[34] One of Coulter's many contradictions is her fervent, passionate hostility to

---

[33] Norman Podhoretz, "Is America Exceptional?" *Imprimis*, Hillsdale College, October 2012, pg. 1.

[34] See http://octoberbabymovie.net/, which notes "The producers of **OCTOBER BABY** have assigned 10% of the profits of the movie to the Every Life is Beautiful Fund, which will distribute funds to frontline organizations helping women facing crisis pregnancies, life-affirming adoption agencies, and those caring for orphans." See a related website, http://www.everylifeisbeautiful.com/.

abortion (as she puts it, "sticking a fork in a baby's head") combined with her at times intense hatred for those living outside the womb.

My own conclusion of the matter is that her experience of being in an incubator as a baby deeply contributed to the dynamic blend of psychological forces which led to her pronounced narcissism, which in turn propels Coulter back to that pivotal, life-beginning event. Hence her decades-long hatred of feminists and abortion.

In *October Baby*, a priest provides Hannah with sound advice which is contrary to that which Coulter would willingly receive (but from which Coulter could find peace): "Because we have been forgiven by God, we should forgive each other. In Jesus, you are forgiven, and, because you are forgiven, you have the power to forgive, to choose to forgive." But forgiveness is such a foreign experience to Coulter, in part because she *fears* forgiveness, in part because she loves her *hatred* too much to give forgiveness (though in the giving is the releasing), and in part because seeking forgiveness would feel *shameful* to Coulter.

But the priest *urged* Hannah, "Let it go. Hatred is a burden you no longer need to carry. Only in forgiveness can you be free, Hannah – forgiveness that is well beyond your grasp, or mine, a forgiveness that you can't find on a trip or even in this cathedral." Fearing forgiveness is Coulter's specialty because she loves her hatred too much. The priest concluded, "But, if the Son shall set you free, you will be free indeed."

At movie's end, people and relationships are healed: Hannah (of course), Hannah and her parents, Hannah and her boyfriend, but also Hannah's birth mother and her current husband, and even the nurse who assisted in the botched abortion. Hannah found the answer to the question she wrote in her diary: "The truth sets you free?" Yes! Free indeed!

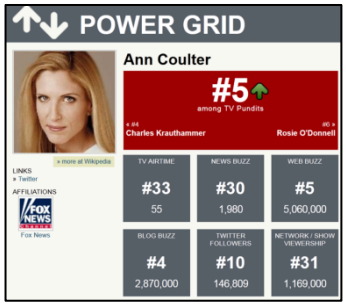
Chapter 5

Pursuit of Power

"I can say whatever I want to say." – *Ann Coulter*

Powerful and Influential Conservative Icon

With her narcissistic drive to prove herself among the best and the brightest – better than the rest of humanity – and driven by pride and prejudice (and a "blonde ambition" as noted in a 1997 profile), Coulter ambitiously pursued power to become a true power broker.



Newsweek included Coulter in its Power 50 list[1] and she ranked number five among TV pundits in Mediaite.com's Power Grid.[2] *Time* included Coulter in its Top 100 list in 2005[3] and she has been a perennial guest at its annual events since then. Coulter is frequently the most popular pundit on Townhall.com and the most popular speaker at the Conservative Political Action Conference (CPAC), the largest annual gathering of conservatives nationwide.

Despite her nonsensical claim to be the "most unpublished writer" in America, Coulter's nine bestselling books ensure she will remain a powerful force within the conservative movement for at least a few more years, as does the popularity of her essays.

Coulter's skill as a master manipulator has been honed through many decades of practice. Being a narcissist helps.

Manipulation and Control

Narcissists manipulate and manipulators use a multi-pronged strategy and variety of techniques to achieve their goals. Often lies (whether little white lies or the much darker kind) frequently figure prominently in their repertoire.

Manipulators are often good story-tellers, which makes it easier for them to convey their lies. Those stories can provide the illusion of truth, or play to the emotions of the hearer, all the while concealing the truth of the matter at hand. Manipulators may try to tell the hearer what the *hearer* wants to believe, making it easier to fool or manipulate them.

But manipulators are not limited to their rhetoric, story-telling abilities, or charismatic qualities in pursuit of their goals. If necessary, they will ridicule, threaten, cajole, or in some other way try to *control* the situation or the one being manipulated.

In Coulter's case, nothing will dissuade her from achieving her objectives. No lie is too great, no principle too sacred, no indecency too cruel to deter her from achieving the desires of her heart.

---

1 See http://www.thedailybeast.com/newsweek/2010/11/01/power-list.html.
2 See http://www.mediaite.com/power-grid/person/?q=Ann+Coulter.
3 See http://www.time.com/time/specials/packages/article/0,28804,1972656_1972696_1973325,00.html.

Manipulators love to control. (Or, wanting to control, they manipulate.) Sometimes they will yield a certain degree of control to win out in the end. But Coulter has an *obsessive* need to control, a compulsive desire to be in charge.

I saw this first-hand in 1997, when she would scrutinize everything written and said about her (which wasn't much at that time, as her star had not yet risen). She would scour the media for mentions of her and then directly submit letters-to-the-editor to rebut specifics (or have her surrogates do it for her). Similarly, Coulter would highlight transcripts of her own TV interviews for content and corrections. Her *image* – and her *control* of her image – were paramount to her. I would suggest she has not improved with age.

Back then she could argue her way out of trouble or, increasingly, lie. Now she even lies to herself. Now, any press is good press: praise is a just reward, accolades well-deserved; criticism is an unjust attack upon a heroine being victimized by the critic.

Having to some degree lost control of her personal narrative in the public square, Coulter now subjectively controls the narrative within her own mind, perceiving herself as the godly embattled heroine of her own imagination.

Nevertheless, critics and opponents of her worldview (and, thus, of her) must still be cut down.

"I Can Say Anything!"

Coulter's control of her own life and career exerts itself in numerous ways and is strikingly revealed in a 2004 documentary about her life: "My hobby has become my life. I have the greatest life imaginable. I think I have a greater life than anyone in the universe. I sleep till noon. I work in my underwear. I'm my own boss. No one can fire me. The only people who can fire me are the American people."[4]

With her power and control, Coulter believes "I can say whatever I want to say."[5] Coulter boasts, "I am the illegal alien of commentary. I will do the jokes that no one else will do."[6] Coulter promises, "A word to those of you out there who have yet to be offended by something I have said: Please be patient. I am working as fast as I can."[7]

Asked in 2003, whether interviewers try to provoke her into saying outrageous things just because of who she is, Coulter responded, "No. I do that on my own."[8]

With a distinct air on invincibility, Coulter boasts, "The American people like me; editors don't. I've arranged my life so that I am unfireable. I don't have any bosses. The only people who can fire me are the American people."[9] Coulter contends, "I have set up my life so that I cannot be fired, I cannot be edited."[10] Yes, these are all things *she* has done. *She* has acquired total control to accomplish these things.

---

4 Ann Coulter, quoted in Patrick Wright's 2004 documentary, *Is It True What They Say About Ann?*
5 "Interview with Ann Coulter," *JD Jungle*, http://www.lawcrossing.com/article/1172/Interview-with-Ann-Coulter/#.
6 Ann Coulter, *If Democrats had Any Brains, They'd be Republicans*, Crown Forum, 2008.
7 Ann Coulter, "Be patient, I am working as fast as I can to offend," 6/22/06.
8 Lev Grossman, "10 Questions for Ann Coulter," *Time*, 7/14/03.
9 George Gurley, "Coultergeist," *New York Observer*, 8/25/02, http://www.observer.com/node/37827.
10 Ann Coulter, *In Depth*, C-Span, 8/7/11.

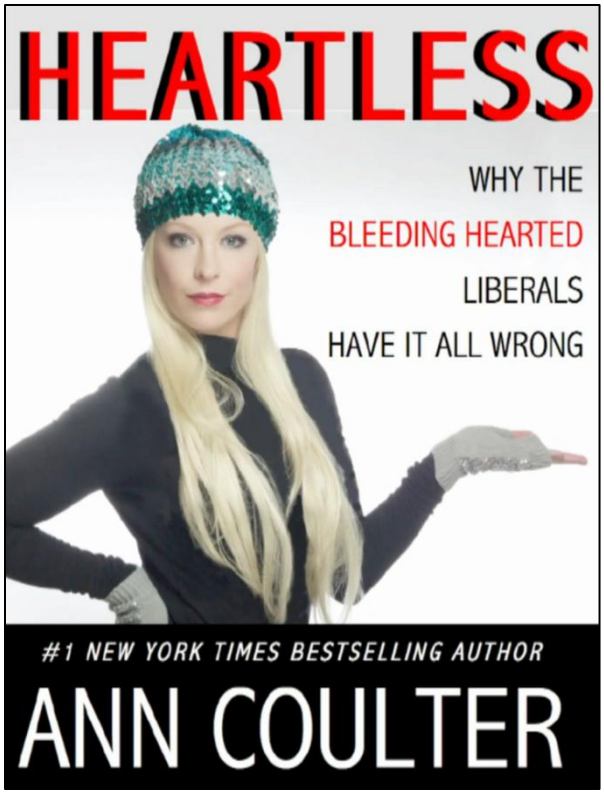
Wearing the mantle of victimology while parading her shield of invincibility, Coulter claims, "[The mainstream media has] certainly tried to [destroy] me, but that's why I go through ten years of my allegedly career-ending statements and even if Washington politicians currently there can't learn, perhaps some young right wingers will."[11] (What young right wingers are learning is how to be unrepentantly narcissistic.)

In 2007, referring to her then latest scandal, Coulter bragged, "This is my 17th allegedly career-ending moment."[12] Since then, one could easily add scores of additional career-ending moments which Coulter has survived. Her survival of those scandals attests to the extent to which Conservatism has compromised its principles.

The Chappaquiddick Standard

Robert Tyrrell of the *American Spectator* wrote of Sen. Ted Kennedy, who "survived Chappaquiddick, and though he never became president, he did persevere to become, as *Kultursmog* had it, the Lion of the Senate."[13]

Tyrrell continued, "It was a comeback that was to be duplicated by a rising generation of Liberal roués with such frequency that historians will someday note that a seminal point was arrived at in the decline of Liberalism when Liberals were suddenly capable of surviving what in any prior era would be a career-ending scandal."



In an eerily similar fashion, the *Wall Street Journal* observed in 2002, "Miss Coulter's very survival as a public figure has been her most startling trick, indeed has offered a kind of breathtaking spectacle. For much milder remarks than she daily defiantly serves up, we've seen veteran broadcasters hounded out of their careers."[14] (Yes, a "breathtaking spectacle!" For over a decade, Conservatism has tolerated the intolerable among its leadership, going so far as to *idolize* Coulter!)

Sounds similar, doesn't it? In most of Coulter's books and in many of her speeches and essays, Coulter brings up Chappaquiddick, perhaps to insulate *herself* from criticism. At least *she* didn't kill anyone (even by accident). Her fans will point to Kennedy in order to defend Coulter. But what are they really defending? Hate speech? Mendacity? Immorality? Arrogance?

The consequences of the Chappaquiddick Standard for liberals and for the nation cannot be over-emphasized. Tyrrell notes, "Increasingly the Liberals, born of 1972, addressed feelings: feelings

---

11 Ann Coulter, *Glenn Beck Show*, 10/5/07, http://www.glennbeck.com/news/10052007.shtml.
12 Ann Coulter, *Hannity & Colmes*, FNC, 3/5/07.
13 R. Emmett Tyrrell, Jr., *The Death of Liberalism*, Thomas Nelson, 2011, pg. 24.
14 Melik Kaylan, "Dr. Johnson, Meet Ann Coulter," *Wall Street Journal*, 8/26/02.

of *empowerment*, of *entitlement*, of *rage*. Ever since, a corruption has set in and led to even greater arrogance, insularity, and remoteness from the American mainstream."[15]

What are the consequences of the Coulter Standard for Conservatism and the nation? As I have warned since 9/11, Coulter is mainstreaming extremism within the Conservative Movement – and few conservatives care.

Projection of Power

As the sidebar indicates, Coulter eschews niceness as she embraces nastiness.

But is meanness only an act? If so, it is a most telling one. That Coulter so anxiously desires to be viewed as the witty beauty with brains and as the conservative controversialist with courage, yet so gleefully delights in her reputation as a "mean Christian," demonstrates how little niceness really matters to her. For Coulter, niceness is a sign of weakness and vulnerability. Being polemical, pugnacious, and offensive – these are projections of power and affirmations of control. For her, it is far better to attack than to entreat.

Any number of people have been witnessed to Coulter's niceness. But consider to *whom* she is nice: friends, colleagues, fans, and people of power and influence. Coulter *acts* nice to certain people – talk show hosts, speech sponsors – to manipulate them for her own purposes, but *being* nice, particularly to inconsequential people, is not intrinsic to her nature or her character. Indeed, her disdain for niceness is manifested in her commentary and her interaction with people from whom she can extract nothing. Hence her rudeness, name-calling, invective, defamation, and the like.

Moreover, as seen in the previous chapter, Coulter wields her power in opposition to those against whom she is prejudiced – her inferiors in status, in ideology, in whatever criteria she uses at the moment. Niceness, like truth, is not an absolute in Coulter's world.

"I Am Not Nice!" – Ann Coulter

Calling herself a "mean Christian" and claiming "being nice to people is an incidental tenet of Christianity," Coulter is rightly called the "Queen of Mean." Coulter's stated goal is to "outrage the enemy." (Why be surprised when she succeeds?) Niceness is of little value to her.

Caught up in pride, prejudice, the pursuit of power, fame, and fortune, Coulter dismisses niceness as an unimportant aspect of human interactions. Being recognized for her beauty, brains, and balls is crucial to her self-image and self-identity.

Coulter is often lauded publicly for her beauty, brains, courage, and any number of other traits, and she readily accepts those compliments because those traits *matter* to her. Niceness doesn't. In an interview on *Glenn Beck TV*, host Andrew Klaven offered Coulter those usual compliments, including being nice, and she replied, "I'm nice to *you*, Andrew. Don't ruin my reputation. I'm not nice *generally*, I'm nice to *you*." Seemingly, niceness is one of those weaknesses which Coulter despises.

Niceness is reserved for her family, friends, sponsors, benefactors, and fans. It is reserved for those from whom Ann can benefit. Otherwise the word "nice" is not in her vocabulary.

Not coincidentally, in that same interview Coulter praised her own courage in defending the use of offensive words such as "retard," "stupid," and "idiot" in the public square. Klaven somehow remained impervious to the reality of why so many people think Coulter is mean.

– Ann Coulter and Andrew Klaven, *Glenn Beck TV*, 12/6/12.

[15] R. Emmett Tyrrell, Jr., *The Death of Liberalism*, Thomas Nelson, 2011, pg. 78.

Cult of Power

It is beyond the scope of this book to highlight all the reasons for Coulter's own public survival as a conservative icon, power broker, and self-appointed king-maker. Nevertheless, unbridled power lies at the heart of her success. Not right principles, not Christian scruples, not moral absolutes, but raw *power*!

Coulter's best and closest friends and colleagues are all very important people – wealthy, influential, and powerful. The people she associates with are among the crème-de-la-crème, politically, socially, and within media circles. Her presence among them – as a star encircled by them – affirms her worth and reminds her of just how special she is. Red carpet events add to the luster of her psyche and headlining gala events stroke her ego.

Her ability to appear on virtually any talk radio or talk TV show whenever she wants – and to survive and thrive amidst every controversy she herself creates – dramatically boosts her ego. Coulter feels she *can* get away with anything because she *has* gotten away with everything.

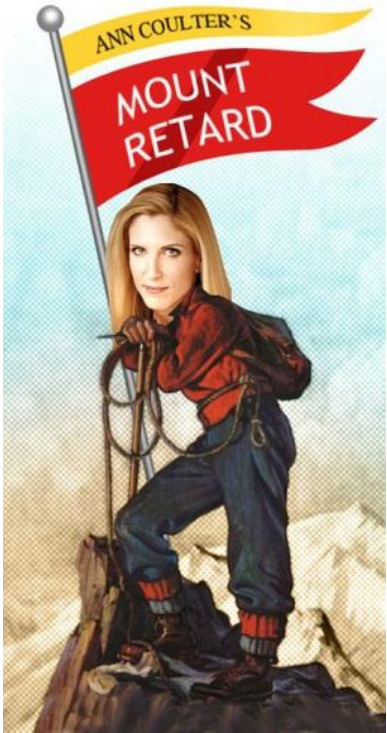
That power and those cultivated connections enable her to do whatever she wants and, ironically, to be far less than she could be. In a sense, her empowerment has constricted her conscience and her character, thereby cheating her of the benefits of both.

Here's another example of Coulter's power: Coulter was inspired to write *Mugged* in April and it was published in September! Within the first month of its publication, Coulter appeared on more than two dozen TV shows and gave numerous speeches promoting her book. Moreover, on the weekend before the November election, Coulter held speaking events in five cities in Wisconsin.

Cruel Coulter

The heart of the narcissist beats like that of any other person, yet the emotions contained therein are far different from us ordinary folk. Rev. Anne Robertson believes:

> The difference between someone with a big ego and a narcissist is that the narcissist is incapable of empathy. The narcissist is mean and feels no guilt for pain inflicted on others. So a narcissist is not just told in childhood that they are above everyone else in all ways, but is also made to believe those inferior others have no worth and can therefore be used (or abused) for the narcissist's ends.[16]



Hence Coulter's personal and philosophical proclivity to be as provocative as possible, her attacks on four liberal 9/11 widows (Jersey Girls), her demonizing talk show host Donny Deutsch, whom she herself has victimized, *ad infinitum*. (See chapters 9-15 which present seven case studies of what drives a narcissist and the consequential damage which can result from unbridled narcissism.)

Retarded Rhetoric

Coulter is in love with her own mind. Her intellect is one of her idols. Hence her endless use of terms like idiot, stupid, imbecile, crazy, nutcase, insane, and the like. In *Mugged* alone Coulter called liberals "pea-brained," "insane," "lunatics," "brain-dead,"

[16] Author interview.

"cretins," and "neurotic nuts," denounced their "insanity," and applied the descriptor "white feminist nut" to eight different Duke University professors.

Oh – and also the R-Word – which Coulter frequently uses in her commentary.

Despite Coulter's nasty tweets during the Democratic National Convention, and her juvenile and denigrating tweets during the vice presidential debate, the *Daily Caller* consciously (but not cogently) chose Coulter as a twitter commentator during the third presidential debate. Coulter rewarded the *Daily Caller* by calling Obama retarded.

But Coulter has a long history of using that word.

"I don't have to go through this layer of retarded people to get my work out."[17] "Retard Chris Matthews interrupts Condi interview to ask about … BIRTHERS!!"[18] "I highly approve of Romney's decision to be kind and gentle to the retard."[19]

In a subsequent email defending her tweet, Coulter wrote, "*The only people who will be offended are too retarded to understand it."*[20]

Coulter is so enraptured with her intellect that she takes every opportunity to tell others how stupid they are. One word she turns to repeatedly – retarded – is especially repellent to most Americans, liberal and conservative alike. Being a narcissist who "feels no guilt for pain inflicted on others," Coulter appears to relish the controversies which arise whenever she uses the R word.

Consider this CNN report[21] in which blogger Ellen Seidman, the mother of a special needs child, says, "At this point, I'm thinking the woman must surely be aware that the word is offensive, and she chooses not to care. That's pretty vile and heartless." CNN also interviewed comedian and Twitter personality @Uncle_Dynamite who "found [it] disturbing [to have these tweets] coming from a 'well-educated, self-described Christian with such a huge public presence.'"

Uncle Dynamite believes, "Based upon Ann's tweets today, I'd say she's dug in and unrepentant. She must not know, love or respect anyone with an intellectual disability, then, and more's the pity. I'd like to see her after a great day of volunteering at a Special Olympics or Best Buddies event. I'd lay odds she'd never think or say the r-word word ever again, and she'd probably be quick to anger if someone she heard did so."

---

17 Ann Coulter, *In Depth*, C-Span, 8/7/11.
18 Ann Coulter tweet, 8/29/12.
19 Ann Coulter tweet, 10/22/12.
20 Hunter Walker, "Ann Coulter Calls Obama 'The Retard,'" *Politicker*, 10/22/12.
21 Emanuella Grinberg, "Ann Coulter's backward use of the 'r-word,'" CNN, 10/24/12.

Ironically, when she was employed by John F. Kennedy, Jr., as an essayist for *George* magazine, Coulter participated in a car rally in Washington, D.C. in support of the Special Olympics. Been there. Done that. Nineteen months earlier, Coulter condemned wheelchair ballet for a disabled 9-year-old:

> The fact that people want to lie about [wheelchair ballet], it seems to me, tells the kid that it's something that he should be really embarrassed about. And when people, you know, want to avoid him, pretend that he doesn't have this problem, and also I just think it puts a little too much stress on these secular achievements. There are more important things in life than being [a ballet dancer] … No, it would be one thing if he were *painting*. There are *some things* he might be able to do reasonably *well*, but this, it is completely *absurd*. A *wheelchair* for a *dancer*? … And if it were just an *accommodation* to help him do something *else* he might be able to *do*, but this really, I mean, it's like an *embarrassing* – everybody's *embarrassed* about it. They want to *hide* him, *pretend* it's not *there*. … But I think the message you're sending to him is, this is *so embarrassing* no one will *talk* about it and we're going to *hide* it. I think it's a *bad message*. How about there are *other things* you can *do* with your life and your *soul* is more *important* than some *stupid achievement* as a *ballet dancer*."[22]

R-Word Realities

The themes of this book are perfectly illustrated by Coulter's contempt for others in her continuing use of the R-Word. She exhibits great **pride** using, and boasting of using, that word. Hers is an air of invincibility, knowing that she can get away with saying anything she wants without repercussions.

Unrepentant: Ann Coulter brushed off the complaints from advocates for people with mental disabilities, saying that she took the word 'retard' to mean 'loser'

Her **prejudice** against those whom she regards as intellectually and ideologically inferior is unmistakable in her choice of words, especially given that she is a consummate wordsmith. Coulter has no compunction against saying whatever she wants whenever she wants no matter who it hurts. Knowing the pain her words cause only motivates her to continue.

In her **pursuit of power**, she declares that she *can* say anything she wants, that there are absolutely no boundaries to her speech. Her claims are reminiscent of Woody Allen, who said "The heart wants what it wants."[23] No limits. No boundaries. No moral constraints. Therein lies anarchy and extremism.

We also see a rejection of **repentance**. Coulter *will not* repent. She *chooses* not to. She seemingly has no interest in becoming a better person. Rather, all she wants is total control of her life without restraints of any kind.

[22] Ann Coulter, *Politically Incorrect*, ABC, 12/18/97.

[23] Woody Allen used those words to justify leaving his long-time lover for her daughter.

In doing say, Coulter exhibits a high degree of **hypocrisy** because she continually condemns others for the very type of behavior she herself exhibits.

Moreover, **cruelty** is a narcissistic hallmark evident in her work. Coulter does not care about the *consequences to others* of her words, only the consequences to herself. Indeed, she expresses *delight* at the outrage she engenders and boasts it as her goal. Thus, Coulter is not just intellectually-challenged, she is *morally*-challenged and *emotionally*-immature.

Unfazed by criticism, filled with pride, Coulter possesses neither humility nor humanity. Her response to her critics and victims: "Oh, screw them!"[24] Coulter continued, "I feel they're being authoritarian bullying victims." *They're* the bullies!?

Insanely Jealous of Sarah Palin

"I especially love [Sarah Palin] for her enemies. I'm insanely jealous of that. I love her for how she makes liberal heads explode."[25] Why would *anyone* be "insanely jealous" of *anyone* over *anything*? Or *admit* to it?

Why? Because Coulter needs to be the center of attention! Perhaps that's why Coulter has attempted to minimize Palin's influence and use a word certain to draw ire from the former Governor of Alaska.

Of course, Coulter regards liberals as exclusively *her* "pets." In a 2006 interview, she was asked, why liberals can't stop attacking her. (Yes, Coulter again claimed to be the victim!).


Ann Coulter Insanely Jealous of Sarah Palin

February 19, 2011

By Mike

Feb 19, 2011–Right wing firebrand Ann Coulter admitted that she was insanely jealous of Sarah Palin. Coulter, author of several books said she, "marveled at how Sarah could structure sentences and make up books so blithely." When Palin was confronted about making up words her response was, "Well Shakespeare made up words." Ann couldn't agree more. She said, "My favorite writers are definitely Sarah Palin and William Shakespeare." This Washington Roast reporter can believe that Sarah Palin is Coulter's favorite author. Coulter was also jealous of Palin's family. Coulter said, "My family is so boring compared to hers. We don't dance with the stars or get pregnant as teens."-"So full of artless jealousy is guilt It spills itself in fearing to be spilt."

Coulter contended, "Actually, they can't help themselves. They're like my pets."[26]

Power-Broker

The Claire Boothe Luce Policy Institute presented Coulter with an award during its 2000 Leadership Seminar:

> "annual Conservative Leadership Award … as an exemplar of the conservative movement … for her unfailing dedication to truth, freedom and conservative values and for being an exemplar, in word and deed, of what a true leader is."

In her speech at that event, Coulter repeatedly used a word – czar – indicative of her lust for power: "Every once in a while I sit back and think what the world would be like if I were czar."[27] Yes, Coulter has recurring thoughts about being a czar. What an *intriguing* phrase, interesting *choice* of words – not queen or ruler but *czar*. *Absolute power*! She continued, " And, if I were czar …" and later still, "If I were czar of the universe

---

[24] Ann Coulter, *Alan Colmes Radio Show*, Fox News Talk Radio, 10/26/12.
[25] Ann Coulter, *The Last Word with Lawrence O'Donnell*, MSNBC, 2/17/11.
[26] George Gurley, "Ann Coulter Ecstatic: Enemies Stoke Sales – 'They're Like My Pets'," *New York Observer*, 7/2/06.
[27] Ann Coulter, Leadership Seminar, Clare Booth Luce Policy Institute, 6/12/00.

…" The previous year, Coulter used that same phrase on national television: "But if I were the czar of the universe..."[28]

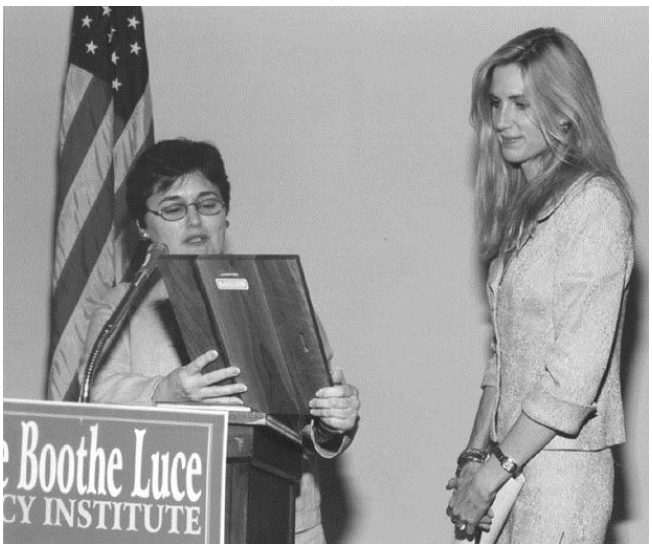
CBLPI's leadership conference posited starkly contrasting perspectives on power with speeches by both Coulter and Rep. Dick Armey (R-TX). Fate, like fortune, can be fickle, and fraught with wry humor. It was amusing to hear Coulter speak about her recurring thoughts of *being* "czar of the universe," and then hearing Rep. Dick Armey exhort those same students to *spurn* power.

His speech is worthy of extensive review:

> Power – and the thought of power – is a great aphrodisiac in politics. It is a very seductive thing. And it is probably the most dangerous thing I can think of. … You can choose between the objective of having and holding power, or you can choose the better road, in my estimation, which is service. … Let me encourage you to stay away from power.
>
> … The other thing is, if you accept the power model, you're inevitably leading yourself down the road to heartbreak, because you get, as they say, swelled up with yourself. You begin to believe, "I'm a powerful, big shot person here so I am entitled to have my way." Well, I'll tell you, ladies and gentlemen, you rarely get your way in this life. …[29]

As Armey pointed out, the power paradigm *changes* the self-identity of the person caught within it, even changing who we "think" we are. Power puffs people up with pride, which inevitably leads to "heartbreak" and ruin. Armey continued:

> The other is the service model and in the service model I am personally guided by Paul's letter to the Philippians. … Chapter 2, verses 3 and 4 says "Act not in self-service or vain conceit, but think on others better than you think on yourself." … If you achieve a position of elected standing, you have a great trust that's been given to you by people and you have an opportunity to do a service in their life. You ought to accept that as a great compliment that people would dare to trust you with some important part of their life, and do the best service you can.



Armey's proposed alternative – the *service* model – is ignored, indeed ridiculed, by Coulter, who has only contempt for those who serve. Certainly, Coulter's "vain conceit" and consequent contempt for those beneath her contribute to her inability to humble herself and to serve others.

[28] Ann Coulter, *Politically Incorrect*, ABC, 3/12/99.
[29] Rep. Dick Armey, Leadership Conference, Clare Boothe Luce Policy Institute, 6/12/00.

Power Corrupts

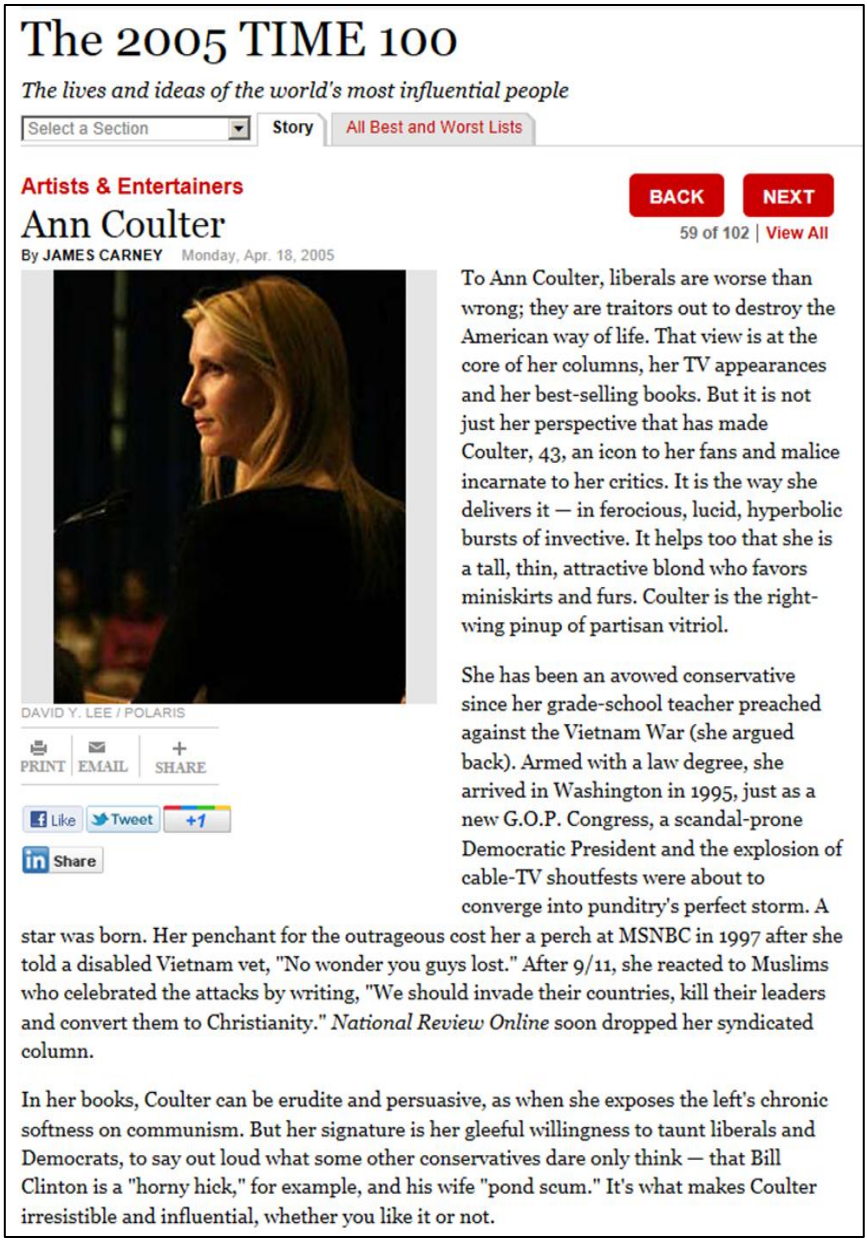
An episode of the hit sci-fi television series, *Warehouse 13*, surprisingly offered insight into the threat power poses to its possessor. Claudia, one of the agents of a secret government organization headquartered at Warehouse 13, is seduced by the power of an artifact. Cautioned against this seduction, Claudia defends herself by saying, "I'm not *them*." Her boss warns Claudia, "They weren't them either until they *became* them."[30] Yes, *power can possess the person possessing it*. Therapist Dr. Phil is not alone in stating the obvious: "Power is a huge aphrodisiac."[31] But there is a solution, as best-selling author Mitch Albom observes: "They say that when you have power you get the praise of men, but in weakness you go to God."[32]

Lord Action famously observed, "All power tends to corrupt; absolute power corrupts absolutely."[33] This tendency, which is intrinsic to human nature, exists in every area of life. (The Framers of the American Constitution, well aware of this, designed the intricate system of checks-and-balances in our system of government precisely to minimize the effects of this human tendency while maximizing the freedom and participation of its citizenry.)

Theologian Reinhold Niebuhr recognized one of the reasons the lust for and acquisition of power can be so self-destructive: "The lust for power is prompted by a darkly conscious realization of its insecurity."[34]

The acquisition of any degree of power never seems to be enough. Insecurity necessitates acquiring even more power which, ironically, does little to remove the insecurity. Indeed, as the character of the individual devolves due to the growth and misuse of power, her fears and anxieties can grow and multiply, prompting desires for ever greater power.

Keller wanrs us that "in political idolatry, we make a god out of having power."[35] The power itself – and the possessor of power – both become gods to many people. Moreover, those possessing power can seem to become gods in their own eyes.



The 2005 TIME 100

The lives and ideas of the world's most influential people

Select a Section | Story | All Best and Worst Lists

Artists & Entertainers

BACK NEXT

59 of 102 | View All

Ann Coulter

By JAMES CARNEY Monday, Apr. 18, 2005

DAVID Y. LEE / POLARIS

PRINT EMAIL SHARE

Like Tweet +1

Share

To Ann Coulter, liberals are worse than wrong; they are traitors out to destroy the American way of life. That view is at the core of her columns, her TV appearances and her best-selling books. But it is not just her perspective that has made Coulter, 43, an icon to her fans and malice incarnate to her critics. It is the way she delivers it — in ferocious, lucid, hyperbolic bursts of invective. It helps too that she is a tall, thin, attractive blond who favors miniskirts and furs. Coulter is the right-wing pinup of partisan vitriol.

She has been an avowed conservative since her grade-school teacher preached against the Vietnam War (she argued back). Armed with a law degree, she arrived in Washington in 1995, just as a new G.O.P. Congress, a scandal-prone Democratic President and the explosion of cable-TV shoutfests were about to converge into punditry's perfect storm. A star was born. Her penchant for the outrageous cost her a perch at MSNBC in 1997 after she told a disabled Vietnam vet, "No wonder you guys lost." After 9/11, she reacted to Muslims who celebrated the attacks by writing, "We should invade their countries, kill their leaders and convert them to Christianity." *National Review Online* soon dropped her syndicated column.

In her books, Coulter can be erudite and persuasive, as when she exposes the left's chronic softness on communism. But her signature is her gleeful willingness to taunt liberals and Democrats, to say out loud what some other conservatives dare only think — that Bill Clinton is a "horny hick," for example, and his wife "pond scum." It's what makes Coulter irresistible and influential, whether you like it or not.

---

30 *Warehouse 13*, episode 402, "An Evil Within."
31 Dr. Phillip McGraw (Dr. Phil), *The View*, ABC, 11/15/12.
32 Mitch Albom, *Have a Little Faith*, Hallmark, 2011.
33 See The Acton Institute, http://www.acton.org/pub/religion-liberty/volume-2-number-6/power-corrupts.
34 Reinhold Niebuhr, *The Nature and Destiny of Man: Volume I, Human Nature*, Scribner, 1964, pg. 189.
35 Timothy Keller, *Counterfeit Gods: The Empty Promises of Money, Sex, and Power, and the Only Hope that Matters*, Dutton, 2009, pg. 101.

Seeking power and using power to pursue the expansion of power, Coulter has been corrupted by the very power she uses to corrupt others. In 2005, *Time* included Coulter in its Top 100 most influential people of the world.

In its write-up, *Time* called Coulter "the right-wing pinup of partisan vitriol" with a "penchant for the outrageous." The concluding paragraph claimed "her signature is her gleeful willingness to taunt liberals and Democrats, to say out loud what some other conservatives dare only think … It's what makes Coulter irresistible and influential, whether you like it or not."[36]

[36] James Carney, "Ann Coulter," *Time*, 4/18/05, http://www.time.com/time/specials/packages/article/0,28804,1972656_1972696_1973325,00.html.

Chapter 6

Fame

"Nothing is so common as the wish to be remarkable." – *William Shakespeare*

Escaping Imperfection

Let's recap. Ann Coulter is a narcissist who idolizes herself perhaps even more that her fans idolize her, who is so puffed up with pride that she seemingly cannot apologize or repent about anything, who is so prejudiced that she looks down upon a vast array of individuals and groups, and who pursues and exercises power in order to create a world according to her will.

Yet, Ann, while believing herself to be the best and the brightest, believing herself to belong among the beautiful people, and believing herself to be a powerbroker extraordinaire, cannot reconcile her belief in herself with the flaws and weaknesses that she increasingly sees in herself, flaws and weaknesses which cause her to engage in addictive thinking (denial, projection, and rationalization) in order to ignore and reject the reality of those flaws and weaknesses.

One way to alleviate her doubts and insecurities is to wallow in the fame she's already acquired. If her fans love her because she is so great, and if her foes hate her because she poses such a threat to them, then she really must be perfect after all.

Fame – Great and Small

The theme song for the classic television comedy series *Cheers*, "Where Everybody Knows Your Name," reflects a human need to be known and to belong, whether in a small group or a much larger venue, such as on a national platform.

Irene Cara's 1980 hit song "Fame," from the blockbuster movie of the same name, declares the performer will be remembered forever, just as she will live forever (in the hearts and minds of others). Her desire is to make it to heaven and "light up the sky like a flame" because she has "what it takes."

Similarly, in the 2010 hit song "Firework," pop sensation Katy Perry urges the listener to "ignite the light" within and "let it shine," to become a dazzling, colorful firework which astonishes the crowds and shows them "what you're worth."

Everyone wants to be remembered. However, when in excess, that pathology can become so great that some people don't care *how* they are remembered – for good or for evil. Ignominy is sufficient for them. For instance, some serial killers strive to achieve fame *because of* their evil actions – not so much for *doing* evil but for the *attention* they receive.

Compelled to Seek Fame

An excessive desire for fame and glory can wreak havoc in a person's life and psyche. It has certainly done so in Coulter's life. As noted in the Introduction, I asked a colleague of Coulter's about the "mass of contradictions" in Ann's life. This colleague sees these contradictions *linked* to her desire for fame: "Part

of it has to do with *being* a celebrity, but part of it has to do with being the kind of person who *so wants* to be a celebrity."[1]

As noted in *The Beauty of Conservatism*, Coulter is afflicted with the Success Syndrome.[2] Counselor Mary Bell observes, "Achievement is the alcohol of our time."[3] That reality in the lives of many people cannot be over-emphasized.[4]

Evangelist Timothy Keller has written extensively about idol worship and observed, "More than other idols, personal success and achievement lead to a sense that we ourselves are god, that our security and value rest in our own wisdom, strength, and performance."[5] Looking to oneself for all the answers – and having an exalted opinion of oneself at that – is the path to self-destruction.

Keller continued, "To be the very best at what you do, to be at the top of the heap, means no one is like you. You are supreme." Yet, being at the top is never enough, as so many people driven to get there have discovered. And being at the top means there is only one direction one can go from there. Trusting in oneself – like the fabled lawyer who represents himself having a fool for a client – ensures the inevitability of that fall.

Tennis legend Chris Evert knows first-hand the seductiveness and folly of fame. Evert's entire self-identity became a shambles. She admitted, "I had no idea who I was, or what I could be away from tennis. I was depressed and afraid because so much of my life had been defined by my being a tennis champion. I was completely lost."[6] Fame and fortune have a way of blinding us to who we really are (or, in some, expose who we really are to others).

Fame, like a seductive mistress, can master us. Evert continued, "Winning made me feel like I was somebody. It made me feel pretty. It was like being hooked on a drug. I needed the wins, the applause, in order to have an identity." The addict met her mistress and master, losing her identity in the process.

Pop icon Madonna shared a similar story of ambivalence and uncertainty, wanting so much to *be* an important person yet never quite escaping feeling the opposite: "I have an iron will, and all of my will has always been to conquer some horrible feeling of inadequacy."[7] Continually driven to prove herself to herself even more than to others, Madonna continued, "I push past one spell of it and discover myself as a special human being and then I get to another stage and think I'm mediocre and uninteresting."

This endless cycle of self-worship and feelings of emptiness can seem inescapable. As Madonna put it, "Again and again. My drive in life is from this horrible fear of being mediocre. And that's always pushing

---

1 Author interview.
2 See Chapter 2, "The Cuckolding of Conscience," in my free PDF book, *The Beauty of Conservatism: The Seduction of Ann Coulter and the Cuckolding of Conscience*, at www.CoulterWatch.com/beauty.pdf.
3 Timothy Keller, *Counterfeit Gods: The Empty Promises of Money, Sex, and Power, and the Only Hope that Matters*, Dutton, 2009, pg. 73.
4 See also Appendix 1: "Success of the Godly."
5 Keller, pg. 75.
6 *Ibid*., pg. 77.
7 *Ibid*., pg. 72.

me, pushing me. Because even though I've become Somebody, I still have to prove that I'm *Somebody*. My struggle has never ended and it probably never will."

Star Search

Coulter has been on her own quest for fame and glory, her own journey to the stars. Indeed, early in her career, Coulter claimed that stardom is something to be *desired, sought, acquired,* and she has purposely pursued it with vigor. These salient on-air remarks in her early career shed light on her own aspirations.

- "If you're royal in your home country, why would you leave? Don't people think you're really cool for that?"[8]
- "Yeah, but, can I just say, you're rich and famous. You people talking about how horrible it is to live with the paparazzi. Of all the problems there are in this world this is really kind of at the bottom of my list, I have to say. Who wouldn't trade places with you guys?"[9]
- "If you're trying to say that I'm better off than [Princess Diana] was when she was married into this pathetic royal family, and had all this money and everyone loved her and we're celebrating her death [you're mistaken]."[10]

That last sentiment exposes the cognitive dissonance of Coulter's mind. While holding Diana and the royal family in contempt, Coulter apparently relished trading places with Diana (even if it meant being part of the "pathetic royal family") in order to have all that wealth and adulation.

Earlier that year, Coulter revealed a familiarity with, as she put it, "socialite circles," in which it is common for "people to claim to be foreigners – they're always claiming they're sort of foreign royalty." [11] Coulter added, "I have lots of friends and acquaintances of friends who have [known alleged European royalty]" seeking temporary loans.

"Having spent most of my twenties dating in New York City," Coulter observed that "in New York people [appreciate] meeting a person's family and friends from when the person was a child and not just recent acquaintances." In other words, potential friends or beaus need to be *vetted*! Background checks for a date?

On another occasion, Coulter made the puzzling claim that people prefer dying in big catastrophes than car crashes. She said, "I'd much rather die in an airline crash than in a car crash because no one really pays attention. You feel a lot sorrier for somebody who dies when a lot of people die around them."[12]

Dan Travers, a long-time friend of Coulter's, observed, "She likes the attention and the fans. She thrives on the whole thing."[13] To those who have seen Coulter in person at rallies and conferences, this is a self-evident truth. A perfect example occurred in 1998, when the mask came off while on her book tour for her first book, *High Crimes and Misdemeanors*. The impulse for glory was so *unquenchable* within Coulter that she ultimately rejected her publisher's pleas to refrain from attending a Clinton impeachment rally while on her "non-partisan" book tour. Indeed, she promised she wouldn't attend and she broke her promise. Walking on stage, Coulter burst out, "I said I wouldn't talk. … I promised my publisher that in

---

8 Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 1/2/97.
9 Ann Coulter, *Politically Incorrect*, ABC, 9/24/97.
10 Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 9/12/97.
11 Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 1/2/97.
12 Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 11/24/96.
13 Ann Coulter, quoted by Howard Kurtz, "The Blonde Flinging Bombshells at Clinton," *Washington Post*, 10/16/98.

the interests of appearing non-partisan that I would not be speaking today but I had to come and see my fellow Freepers."[14]

In her pursuit of fame, Coulter rarely declines an interview, whether radio, television, print, or email. By her own count, in 2000, Coulter had already been interviewed over *500* times.[15] Perhaps perceptively, her *National Journal* profile was titled "Blond *Ambition* on the Right." Perhaps prophetically, when I first physically met Ann it was in the midst of a media cycle of Ann Coulter profiles. She had just appeared in *National Journal* and was soon to grace the pages of *TV Guide*, *George* and *Capital Style*.

But Coulter has been climbing the ladder to glory her whole life.

A colleague and confidante of Coulter's explained her transient career, hopping from one job to the next, this way: Coulter's job-hopping was one of "ticket-punching" to "build a legal career" and become credentialed – "Justice Department, Capitol Hill, private-sector legal, public-sector legal, non-profit legal, media. She's done it all. She's an aim high kind of person. All of these appointments and jobs have been very prestigious opportunities."[16] *All in pursuit of glory*.

Coulter consistently *criticizes* our celebrity culture while conspicuously *courting* celebrity status. Is Coulter a "true believer" as Eric Alterman alleges in *National Journal*?[17] Does she seek star status as a *platform* to express her *views*, or for the sake of *being* a celebrity?

The character of British Prime Minister Margaret Thatcher in *Iron Lady* (2011) pithily observed, "It used to be about trying to *do* something; now it's about trying to *be* someone."

On the Red Carpet

Coulter has become someone. And she loves it! The red carpet thrills her, proving her success, proving her worth. Yes, fame and adulation provide Coulter with affirmation of her worth.

Coulter has been a ubiquitous guest at *Time* magazine's annual *Time* 100 gala since 2005 and is frequently featured in the pages of that magazine (as an awardee, interviewee, or guest columnist). She also attended TV Land awards ceremonies in 2007 and 2010, and similar events elsewhere.

As for *political* events, Coulter has been a featured speaker or headliner at every single CPAC conference since 1998. CPAC is the

---

14 Ann Coulter, Free Republic Rally, 10/31/98
15 Vincent Morris, *New York Post*, 6/6/00. http://www.nypost.com/news/30701.htm.
16 Author interview.
17 Annys Shin, "Blond Ambition on the Right," *National Journal*, 5/31/97, pg. 1088.

largest and most prestigious annual gathering of conservatives in the nation, now numbering in the multiple thousands of participants.

With her stature, Coulter easily gains entry into such exclusive events as the RNC and DNC conventions. She is frequently the keynote speaker at political conferences and events around the country and is often the star attraction at other elite gala events, such as David Horowitz Freedom Center's Restoration Weekend, now typically held in Palm Beach, Florida.

Coulter frequently appears as a presenter at the Media Research Center's annual Dishonors Awards ceremony in Washington, D.C. In 2003, Coulter was slated to introduce one of the scheduled presenters, Rush Limbaugh, who was unable to participate. Rather than revise her remarks, Coulter asked the audience to *pretend* that the substitute presenter (*Washington Times* editor Tony Blankley) was Limbaugh and then *introduced* the substitute presenter as Limbaugh!

Coulter was so in love with her own words and wit that she had to share them as written with this elite audience instead of adapting her introductory remarks to suit the situation and introduce the actual speaker.

Gifted Charlatans

Few would disagree that Coulter is gifted and talented. However, fewer conservatives (although their ranks are growing) see Coulter as a charlatan. But a gifted charlatan she is nonetheless.

Author, evangelist, and political activist Neil Mammem has concluded "that there are three kinds of people who get involved in politics. The first kind, I call Fame Seekers. They seem to crave attention, money and power. Many times they have no real foundational principles. They feel their way through morality, voting whatever provides them more power or more popularity."[18] Certainly, Coulter has adapted her espoused principles to suit her own needs and desires – and to increase her fame and power. Few would argue that lies, hate speech, and the like represent positive moral choices.

In writing about Romanticist philosopher Jean-Jacques Rousseau, historian Paul Johnson noted, "What makes Rousseau's dishonesty so dangerous – what made his inventions so rightly feared by his ex-friends – was his diabolical skill and brilliance with which they were presented."[19] Long before Coulter was born, mountebanks manipulated people with "skill and brilliance" – and with inventions and fabrications of their own imaginations – to achieve their own ends. Whether for money, power, fame, or glory – or to destroy political rivals and target hated groups – these individuals could be "so rightly feared" for the power they wielded. Power wrongly used by immoral or amoral people is indeed frightful.

Johnson then quoted Rousseau's biographer, Lester Crocker, "All his accounts of his quarrels … have an irresistible persuasiveness, eloquence and air of

[18] Neil Mammem, *Jesus Is Involved in Politics. Why Aren't You? Why Isn't Your Church?* American Family Association, 2007, 2009, 2010, 2011, pg. 320.

[19] R. Emmett Tyrrell, Jr., *The Death of Liberalism*, Thomas Nelson, 2011, pg. 91.

sincerity; then the facts come as a shock." [20] Those who have been tricked into believing a *lie*, in a *set* of lies, in a false *narrative*, or in the very *image* of the one tricking them, can indeed be "shocked" when reality is revealed. (Some refuse to believe reality even when it is irrefutable. Such is the power of the desire to believe – especially for those who are intellectually, emotionally, or financially invested in the trickster.)

American Spectator publisher R. Emmett Tyrell, Jr., concluded, "Rousseau was one of the great mountebanks of history, but he was not without his gifts."[21] A gifted mountebank remains a mountebank. It appears some of the greatest charlatans and mountebanks are extremely gifted – how else could they become infamously "great?"

Self-Identity and Addictions

One's identity – real, perceived, and projected – is at the heart of this book. Knowing and understanding how Coulter *views* herself, *projects* herself, and who her *real* self really is will determine whether or not one will succumb to the spell of her charms or will clear-headedly discern the truth of her message and of the messenger.

In the past I, and others, have observed that Coulter exhibits the various traits of addictive thinking, traits which arise from the addict's refusal to acknowledge or change wrong behavior. Coulter, as we have seen, struggles with the Success Syndrome, among other psychological pathologies which have so tightly gripped her soul.

Some Christians and conservatives have been criticized for hypocritical behavior, for behavior which fails to meet the standards they set for themselves and others. In his book, *The Reason for God*, Timothy Keller discusses relevant dynamics in the paradigm under discussion in this book. Looking from a spiritual as well as psychological perspective, Keller explains that "[t]he shortcomings of the church can be understood historically as the imperfect adoption and practice of the principles of the Christian gospel."[22] Politicians and political activists of all stripes have their own similar shortcomings to one degree or another. In Coulter, those shortcomings make a very long list.

Keller's very first point revolves around *addiction* – whether to a substance, fame, fortune, or anything else. "First, there is disintegration, because as time goes on you need more and more of the addictive substance to get an equal kick, which leads to less and less satisfaction."[23] That Coulter is an addict is undeniable. To what extent her addictions shape her character and corrupt her conduct is somewhat debatable.

Keller's second point fits Coulter to a T: "Second, there is the isolation, as increasingly you blame others and circumstances in order to justify your behavior."[24] In all of her post-9/11 books, Coulter has *projected* her own social pathologies unto others and *blamed* others for her own sins. Further, she has isolated

---

20 *Ibid*.
21 *Ibid*.
22 Timothy Keller, *The Reason for God: Belief in an Age of Skepticism*, Dutton Adult, 2008, pg. 61.
23 *Ibid*., pg. 78.
24 *Ibid*.

herself by having significant relationships only among her elite peers, ensconcing herself in a cultural and ideological cul-de-sac to immunize herself from criticism.

Continuing, Keller warned that addiction leads to *delusion* and *self-absorption*: "When we build our lives on anything but God, that thing – though a good thing – becomes an enslaving addiction, something we *have* to have to be happy."[25] Consequently, "[t]here is increasing isolation, denial, delusion, and self-absorption. When you lose all humility you are out of touch with reality."

One's self-identity becomes grotesquely distorted. Keller continued:

> Ernest Becker won the Pulitzer Prize for his book *The Denial of Death*. He begins it by noting that a child's need for self-worth "is *the* condition for his life," so much so that every person is desperately seeking what Becker calls "cosmic significance." He immediately warns the reader not to take this term lightly. Our need for worth is so powerful that whatever we base our identity and value on we essentially "deify." We will look to it with all the passion and intensity of worship and devotion, even if we think of ourselves as highly irreligious.[26]

In other words, an unrealistic and inaccurate evaluation of one's self-worth can lead to idolatry *outside* of – and *of* – oneself.

An astute observation by Keller explains why Coulter so vehemently *demonizes* her foes: "If we get our identity, our sense of worth, from our political position, then politics is not really about politics, it is about *us*. Through our cause we are getting a self, our worth. That means we *must* despise and demonize the opposition."[27] Hence Coulter's inability to restrain herself from engaging in the politics of personal *destruction* – including *elimination* rhetoric.

Perfectly pointing toward Coulter's supreme sense of superiority (even as she struggles with insecurities and low self-esteem), Keller noted, "If we get our identity from our ethnicity or socioeconomic status, then we *have* to feel superior to those of other classes and race."[28] We see that as well with Coulter's sense of moral superiority to others and her censoriousness toward others. In Keller's words, "If you are profoundly proud of being an open-minded, tolerant soul, you will be extremely indignant toward people you think are bigots. If you are a very moral person, you will feel very superior to people you think are licentious. And so on."[29]

---

25 *Ibid*.
26 *Ibid*., pg. 163.
27 *Ibid*., pg. 168.
28 *Ibid*., pp. 168-169.
29 *Ibid*., pg. 169.

The Credibility Gap

Early in 2012, author and radio talk show host Steve Deace said, "The commentator that probably has the least amount of credibility in America is Ann Coulter." [30] Why? Deace explained, "She has undermined almost everything Christians say they believe for the last few years, including her recent joining of the board of GOProud, which is a pro-gay Republican group." Deace emphasized that "the list of people I know in American politics who I've studied or interviewed or gotten to know who I think have less credibility and less integrity than Ann Coulter, regardless of their belief system, is a real short one."

On his own radio show, Deace reiterated, "Ann Coulter is the least sincere, most dishonest person in American politics I know and have ever interviewed regardless of which side of the aisle they're on. I just think she's an absolute hack of the highest order, and just totally insincere."[31] Strong words from a keen observer of the political realm.

According to former *Newsweek* editor and political correspondent Howard Fineman, "Ann Coulter is getting exactly what she wants, which is attention."[32] From Fineman's perspective, "Coulter often has intriguing and provocative things to say about the clash between liberalism and conservatism," adding that "some of [her] personal comments were just over the line." If anything, in subsequent years Coulter has redrawn the line, continually pushing the envelope, going further and further over the edge.

One blogger recently expressed it well: "Unfortunately, she never gets straight to any point and seems awfully taken with her own brilliant conclusions and the acrobatics to get to them. I just get the feeling she wants to be provocative above all else. It doesn't seem like she has a larger goal beyond ruffling feathers, but then what do I know?!?!"[33] Yes, indeed! Coulter has fallen in love with her own wit and the dexterity of her mind to engage in mental gymnastics to prove to others what a genius she is.

An editorial[34] published almost a decade ago proves just as true today. Consider these two extracts:

> Demonizing the Other Guy is marketable in 2003. Anyone who glances at the best-seller lists, or pauses over the talk shows of television and radio, knows that. No one on the political left or right plays the game with more sass than Coulter, who has parlayed her sarcastic wit, blonde good looks and simplistic liberal-bashing into fame and big bucks.
> …
>
> Coulter is a celebrity hell-raiser – at best an entertaining sideshow, at worst an impediment to debate. If the general tone of public discourse ever descends to her level, the country is in serious trouble. We don't know whether that will ever happen – but if it does, we know what Coulter will say. She'll blame it all on liberals.

---

30 Steve Deace, *Line of Fire*, WAVA, 1/16/12.
31 Steve Deace, *Steve Deace Show*, Salem Radio Network, 1/16/12.
32 Howard Fineman, quoted in Susan Estrich, *Soulless: Ann Coulter and the Right-Wing Church of Hate*, William Morrow, 2006, pg. 71.
33 "What's the Deal with Ann Coulter?" 9/27/12, http://dailyballyhoo.wordpress.com/2012/09/27/whats-the-deal-with-ann-coulter/.
34 Editorial, "Celebrity hell-raiser: Ann Coulter: All heat, no light," *Boulder News*, 11/16/03.

Using every weapon in her formidable arsenal, waging jihad on liberals with purposely provocative rhetoric designed to inflict the greatest emotional offense, Coulter then blames it all on liberals – both in her initial attacks and in her response to their often justifiable outrage.

Yet her desire for fame and glory remain unabated. The human soul is insatiable when its quest is glory.

Fame and Ignominy

Coulter spoke to the need for fame and glory in a startling essay[35] written in the wake of a shooting tragedy in Colorado this past summer. In her essay, Coulter excoriated the media – and the *victims* – for indulging in grief and, from her perspective, covering-up the motives of the mass murderer.

At the outset, Coulter condemned public displays of grief, asking "can we stop the hugging and the teddy bears?" She then suggested that society "can also become inured to sentiment," adding, "[t]here is nothing so hackneyed in the world of photojournalism as pictures of the hugging and the shrines with candles and teddy bears after a tragedy, with a piano softly trilling in the background."

"This accomplishes nothing," Coulter claimed. She later denounced certain politicians and journalists who pledged not to discuss the alleged shooter, and claimed:

> Only people who are themselves obsessed with being famous could imagine that any kind of fame – even infamy – is some kind of a reward. Thus, President Barack Obama and MSNBC's Lawrence O'Donnell, among others, have vowed to punish the suspect by not mentioning his name.

Coulter then, perhaps exhibiting a form of denial in this area, wrote, "The mad quest for fame is nearly as peculiar a phenomenon as the desire to commit murder. Not everyone has it." Surprisingly, Coulter calls the insatiable drive she herself has for fame a "mad quest" and claims that quest to be rare (by implication, she does not have it.)

Coulter spends several paragraphs seeking "the psychosis behind the desire to" commit mass murder, stating simply, "We want to know why," wanting "information that is both fascinating and potentially useful: What created James Holmes?"

This is the exact opposite of her views on MSNBC in 1996-97. Then, regarding serial killer Andrew Cunanan, Coulter said, "But think how much worse it would have been if he hadn't killed himself. I just want to say Andrew Cunanan is my hero for killing himself."[36] Why was Cunanan, a serial killer, Coulter's hero? She explained, "Now I will not have to hear about him endlessly for the next six years. No matter what else he has done in his life at least he's not telling his life story on Geraldo." Coulter later returned to her main point, reiterating, "It's not going to be as bad as it would have been. If only all serial killers would just off themselves before I have to hear endless, six years, on every talk show about this."

Returning to her essay on the Colorado massacre, Coulter claimed the media is censoring the news. Again, why? Coulter answers: "Not making James Holmes famous – even famously evil – is what people who make their living on TV see as the cruelest punishment they can inflict."

---

35 Ann Coulter, "Obscurity: No Crueler Punishment!" 7/25/12.
36 Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 7/27/97.

In her essay, Coulter cited a scholarly article by Clayton Cramer, contending that mass murderers and copycat killers do not seek fame by their actions. The article cited by Coulter actually refutes Coulter's contentions. Extracts from that article follow (highlights added):[37]

> The level of coverage given by *Time* and *Newsweek* (and perhaps, by the other news media) to certain great crimes appears to encourage unbalanced people, **seeking a lasting fame**, to copy these crimes — as we will see indisputably happened in Joseph Wesbecker's 1989 homicidal rampage.
>
> **Fame and infamy are in an ethical sense, opposites. Functionally, they are nearly identical.** Imagine an alien civilization that does not share our notions of good and evil, studying the expanding shell of television signals emanating from our planet. To such extraterrestrials, Winston Churchill and Adolph Hitler are both "famous"; without an ability to appreciate the vituperation our civilization uses to describe Hitler, they might conclude that both were "great men." Indeed, they might assume that Hitler was the "greater" of the two, because there has certainly been more broadcast about Hitler than about Churchill. **The human need to celebrate human nobility, and to denounce human depravity, has caused us to devote tremendous attention, both scholarly and popular, to portraying the polar opposites of good and evil.**
>
> **The pursuit of fame can lead people to acts of great courage and nobility. It can also lead to acts of great savagery.** The Italian immigrant Simon Rodia, builder of Los Angeles' Watts Towers, once explained that his artistic effort was the result of an ordinary person's desire for fame, because, "A man has to be good-good or bad-bad to be remembered." ("Simon Rodia, 90, Tower Builder", 1965) But for most people, fame isn't as easy as building towers of steel, concrete, and pottery. Unfortunately, being "bad-bad" is easier than being "good-good" – as history amply demonstrates.

So Coulter's point that giving a lot of media attention to particular serial killers poses no danger of encouraging copycat killers is nonsense. The human desire for some level of fame or notoriety is obvious to anyone observant of popular culture. Reality television alone is but one genre which attests to an innate human need, one which tests the wisdom and the character of every human being. Some have such a warped view of the world, of themselves, and of humanity, that they become serial killers. Others have their own peculiar views and psychoses that they become polemicists, killing people with words instead of weapons.

Pharisees – Lovers of Fame and Glory

The Pharisees and Sadducees were lovers of fame, of glory, and of themselves. The Gospel of Matthew records, "But all their works they do to be seen by men."[38] *Everything* they did was for public consumption. They were the ultimate seekers of glory, craving media attention at every turn. They were keen to pray and to give charity publically in order to be seen by men. They needed to be seen to do good works for that was their purpose in doing those works.

[37] See http://www.claytoncramer.com/scholarly/JMME2.htm.
[38] Matthew 23:5.

Similarly, the Gospel of Luke records the words of Jesus: "Woe to you Pharisees! For you love the best seats in the synagogues and greetings in the marketplaces."[39] Luke later adds, "Beware of the scribes, who desire to go around in long robes, love greetings in the marketplaces, the best seats in the synagogues, and the best places at feasts (Luke 20:46)."

The Pharisees "loved the approval of others." "Jesus reserved His severest criticism for religious people who were using their spiritual reputation to get social attention and honors. ... [But] flattery and approving attention of others becomes a narcotic, numbing us to our lack of love for others, to the presence and mind of God, and to the fact that in our sober moments we know that our reputation is far better than we are."[40]
"Fame is the supreme quality we seem to admire," observed author Charles Colson, "even if the person is famous for all the wrong reasons." Apparently Coulter is more concerned that she be famous than how she acquires it.

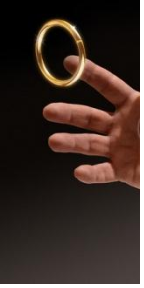
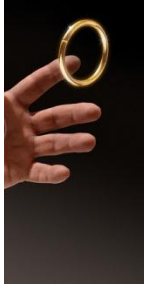
The eminent Robert Novak praised Coulter as "one of the fiery, new breed of conservative commentators who don't worry what the Establishment thinks of them."[41] But Coulter is actually *part* of the (conservative) establishment. More importantly, Coulter considers herself part of the elite, a mover and shaker, a Somebody, an empire-builder and presidency-destroyer. And she is right – she is a "highly-connected player in Washington" and in the other power centers within which she operates.

Coulter remains a force to be reckoned with and her steadily growing power is dangerous. She remains at the "epicenter"[42] of the conservative movement. Considered an anti-establishment rebel and freedom-fighter by the Right, Coulter is anything but. However, Coulter capitalizes on that image to acquire ever greater glory, power, and wealth.

Television and radio talk show host Sean Hannity warns people who become famous to remain "true to your values," and cautions, "Fame is not good. Don't get caught up in this crap."[43] Apparently his good friend, Coulter, never got the word.

Coulter's retinue at this college is typical for her events.

39 Luke 11:43.
40 "What Were the Mistakes of the Pharisees?" at http://www.gospelcom.net/rbc/ds/q0206/point3.html.
41 The final endorsement on *Slander's* book jacket.
42 Ann Coulter, quoted in *Washington Post*, 8/1/00.
43 Sean Hannity, *Sean Hannity Radio Show*, Premiere Radio Networks, 11/19/12.

Chapter 7

Fortune

"For what profit is it to a man if he gains the whole world, and loses his own soul? Or what will a man give in exchange for his soul?" *–Matthew 16:26 (NIV)*

Grasping the Brass Ring

Is Coulter powerful because she can appear on so many talk shows or does she appear on so many talk shows because she is powerful? Or both? As we have seen, achievement is addictive. Success is sweet, yet, simultaneously fleeting, elusive, and illusive – grasping the wind. King Solomon cautioned, "He who loves silver will not be satisfied with silver; nor he who loves abundance, with increase. This also is vanity" (Eccl. 5:10).[1]

Fame and fortune are frequently linked, with people often obtaining both categories. Often those seeking fame use wealth and affluence as measures of their success. Some use fame to acquire wealth while others acquire wealth to garner fame.

Timothy Keller, Coulter's favorite pastor, observes that "[some high achievers] have social skills for vertical relationships, for improving their rank with mentors and bosses, but none for genuine bonding in horizontal relationships with spouses, friends, and family."[2] Keller warns, "The person using money to serve a deep idol of control will often feel superior to people using money to attain power or social approval."[3] Looking back at Coulter's family background, one can see the truth in Keller's words about the origins of this manner of thinking and being: "the family has become the nursery where the craving for success is first cultivated."[4]

Coulter – Classic One-Percenter

"Class privilege" is a phrase frequently used to describe Coulter's background. Normally I do not succumb to the temptation to use *class* as a *criterion* for evaluating an individual. Due to Coulter's conduct, I must consider all options.

Coulter was born in the then-richest county in America[5] to a blue-bloodline tracing back to the Puritans with a father who was a professional elite. Graduate of an Ivy League college (Cornell) and the elite University of Michigan Law School, Coulter was a frequent flyer crisscrossing America to attend concerts and enjoy ski weekends.[6]

In today's parlance, Coulter is a One-Percenter. According to *Forbes*, "The average annual income of the top 1 percent of the population is $717,000, compared to the average income of the rest of the population, which is around $51,000. The real disparity between the classes isn't in income, however, but in net

---

1 See Chapter 4, "The Seduction of Success," in Timothy Keller, *Counterfeit Gods: The Empty Promises of Money, Sex, and Power, and the Only Hope that Matters*, Dutton, 2009.
2 Timothy Keller, *Counterfeit Gods: The Empty Promises of Money, Sex, and Power, and the Only Hope that Matters*, Dutton, 2009, pg. xii.
3 *Ibid*., pg. 65.
4 *Ibid*., pg. 79.
5 http://www.ncnnews.com/bcinfo.htm.
6 Howard Kurtz, "The Blonde Flinging Bombshells at Clinton," *Washington Post*, 10/16/98.

value: The 1 percent are worth about $8.4 million, or 70 times the worth of the lower classes."[7] According to some sources, Coulter's net worth is approximately $8.5 million.[8]

By most culturally-recognized standards, Coulter is successful: she has fame, power, and wealth. She is wont to say that you can never be too thin or too rich. A multi-millionaire herself, Coulter's closest friends are also multi-millionaires, with several billionaires thrown in for good measure.

In Her Poverty

Despite her own personal and professional prosperity, even as a rising star what Coulter acquired *wasn't* enough for her. For Success Syndrome-sufferers, *everything* would not be *enough*. Here, Coulter's chutzpah knows no bounds. *Coulter pleads poverty in her prosperity*.

After becoming a successful and popular author, Coulter claimed, "I'm famous, but poor."[9] Promoting her image as a tireless, selfless patriot in the cause of freedom, Coulter lamented, "I wish somebody *were* funding me. I'm *poor*! … Pro-bono work is *all* I do these days. My law firm is a non-profit law firm."[10] Those words were spoken while Ann Coulter was writing a weekly legal column for *Human Events*, working for a law firm, publishing a best seller on impeachment, and living at the prestigious Kennedy-Warren Arms.

According to Coulter, she took a 60% pay cut when she moved to D.C. to work for the Senate in 1995,[11] or, she "took a two-thirds pay cut, to $35,000 ('I thought you got welfare benefits at that level')."[12] She thought a congressional staffer income of $35,000 was poverty level. For comparative purposes, at that time the average American salary was $27,196/year while the average salary for a teacher was $20,100/year.[13] Yes – believe it or not! – designer-clothes wearing and country-clubbing conservative celebrity Coulter *really* thought she was "poor."

Later in 1999, after moving back to New York, Coulter glibly *flaunted* her wealth, boasting that "In the past few months I've purchased approximately $3,000 worth of computer equipment … $2,000 worth of airline tickets … and obtained housing for myself at the cost of the entire GNP for many smallish countries."[14]

---

7 Alan Dunn, "Average America vs. One Percent," *Forbes*, 3/21/12, http://www.forbes.com/sites/moneywisewomen/2012/03/21/average-america-vs-the-one-percent/.

8 See http://www.getnetworth.com/ann-coulter-net-worth/, accessed 12/3/12.

9 Ann Coulter, CNN, 1/26/99.

10 Ann Coulter, *Washington Journal*, C-Span, 6/8/98.

11 Patrick Wright's 2004 documentary, *Is It True What They Say About Ann?*

12 Howard Kurtz, "The Blonde Flinging Bombshells at Bill Clinton," *Washington Post*, 10/16/98, http://www.washingtonpost.com/wp-srv/politics/special/clinton/stories/coulter101698.htm.

13 *The O'Reilly Factor*, FNC, 2/20/99.

14 Ann Coulter, "Political malpractice," 10/6/99.

Interestingly, Coulter had *already* purchased "$3,000 worth of computer equipment" when she "set up an office at home" in DC the previous year.[15] Question: Is that the same $3,000 for the same equipment, and, if so, did the purchase take place after leaving the Center for Individual Rights in 1998 or after moving to New York City in 1999? Which *version* of *this* story is correct?

Blonde Ambition on the Right

From the beginning, Coulter's ambitious nature was utterly transparent. The title of a 1997 profile summed Coulter up very nicely: "Blonde Ambition on the Right."[16] Another profile that year noted, "Coulter, nevertheless, seems to crave media attention."[17]

According to one of Coulter's bosom buddies, "She's a busy workaholic Yuppie dedicated to the Cause."[18] Few dispute Coulter's "workaholic" predilection, but some question to which "Cause" she is dedicated. Howard Kurtz again had it right in noting that Coulter ended her legal career in order to "devote full time to peddling the book, and herself."[19] And *that* Coulter does with gusto.

What is the relationship between star power and the power of stardom? How corrupting is fame and fortune? Does Faust have any relevance at the dawn of a new millennium? Our examination of the contradictions and conundrums in Coulter's life continues with a look at how the drive for glory can change and corrupt those so driven, and we recall the universally remembered but seldom applied axiom that "Power corrupts. Absolute power corrupts absolutely."

Normally before one attains power one must desire it. Does Ann Coulter *really* "crave" media attention? Is her quest to be a *star*? In 1997, Coulter strangely denied any such quest.

- **George**. "When Coulter talks about the future, her ambitions sound closer to happy homemaker than rising young commentator. 'I'd like to throw in the towel the moment I have someone supporting me,' she says with no apparent irony. 'I don't know how feminists persuaded women that waking up to an alarm clock is a good thing.'"[20]
- **National Journal**. "Despite her growing popularity, Coulter herself doesn't feel the need to be any kind of standard-bearer. 'I don't do any duty conservatism,' she said. If her gig 'as a gasbag' ended tomorrow, 'I'd get to sleep in late.'"[21]
- **Vantage Points**. "I'd like to get *married* and *retire*. Throw in the *towel*. … I *really* don't wanna work for the rest of my life. … I'm not sure I really wanna work that hard at raising children either. I'd like to both *not* have a job *and* have a nanny."[22]

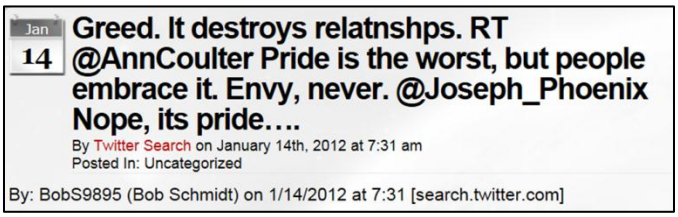
---

15 Ann Coulter, "Health Care Scare," *George*, April 1999, pg. 52.
16 Annys Shin, "Blond Ambition on the Right," *National Journal*, 5/31/97, pg. 1088.
17 Mary Jacoby, "The Pundettes," *Capital Style*, December 1997, pg. 44.
18 Author interview.
19 Howard Kurtz, "The Blonde Flinging Bombshells at Clinton," *Washington Post*, October 16, 1998. See http://www.washingtonpsot.com/wp-srv/politics/special/stories/coulter101698.htm.
20 Anne Marie O'Connor, "Ann Coulter: Post-Feminist Pundit," *George*, August 1997, pg. 117.
21 Annys Shin, "Blond Ambition on the Right," *National Journal*, 5/31/97, pg. 1089.

Was Coulter being genuine and transparent in these assertions, or was she deluding us and herself? One need only observe Coulter's words and actions to get at the truth of the matter. Borrowing from the Bard, Coulter has the "lean and hungry look."

Coulter on Wealth

A good starting point is to look at her views on wealth as expressed at the beginning of her career. Opining on the intersection of wealth and dating, Coulter said, "In New York, the common thing, in socialite circles, is for people to claim to be foreigners … I have lots of friends and acquaintances of friends who have had alleged British royal [relationships] …"[23] Subtly boasting of her success – at the very time she was allegedly poor – said, "All my friends work for a Wall Street law [firm], I work for a Wall Street law firm, and we all go to the same country club in Scarsdale."[24]



Apparently money *can* buy you happiness. Coulter insists, "Yes, life is better if you have money than if you don't have money, and the more money you have the better off you are."[25] And, as for prioritization in one's life, "Your money is private – that is more private than anything else."[26] If wealth is your primary or sole *criteria* for the "good life" then doesn't the *acquisition* of wealth become your primary goal, often at the *expense* of character development?

The *love* of money, fame – and the accompanying prestige and power – is *central* to the real Ann Coulter.

Coulter recently proposed a *wealth* tax to replace *income* tax, prompting Hannity to accuse her of sounding like a socialist.[27] She was eager to *confiscate* the wealth of liberals like Warren Buffet and Bill Gates.[28] However, she zealously defends *earners* (like herself) keeping their *income*.

Greedy Founding Fathers

Gauging her success – and therefore her self-worth – using wealth as a standard warps even her views on America's Founding Fathers. In a startling speech[29] given at the CPAC conference in 1999, Coulter contended:

> There is one other thing I wanted to get to particularly because I gather we're not supposed to be talking about it. The other big debate besides freedom or tyranny, that has recently been thrust upon us by Tailgate, is whether a self-governing nation requires integrity from its leaders.

---

22 Ann Coulter, *Vantage Points: Issues for Women*, Amazon City Radio, 12/5/97.

23 Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 1/2/97.

24 Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 6/14/97.

25 Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 2/1/97. Ironically, (for a fervent free marketer) this is paradoxically a *capitalist* form of *Marxism*, a variant of "economic determinism" which equates wealth with success, happiness or any other goal you care to plug into the equation. Wealth *cannot* buy happiness, nor is it a building block of *character*.

26 Ann Coulter, *Rivera Live*, CNBC, 4/10/98.

27 *Sean Hannity Radio Show*, Premiere Radio Networks, 9/28/12.

28 *Ibid*. Coulter expressed a disdain for accumulated or acquired wealth. But a tax on wealth would eventually and inevitably impoverish Americans. Does constitutional scholar Ann Coulter not grasp the concept of property rights (which include wealth) and "takings" which drains individuals and family of what they own and earned? In the late 90s, before "the era of big government" was over, Coulter railed against President Clinton calling taxes "patriotic." Now, with Obama calling for "economic patriotism," Coulter sounds ever more like the Left she despises.

29 Ann Coulter, CPAC, 1/31/98.

> Our leaders – our Founding Fathers pledged their lives, their fortunes and their sacred honor for a measly little tea tax. Now we consider it *de rigeur* to have 40% of our income stolen by the federal government and count on the Republicans to give a little tax credit so we can take some of our money back.

Here Coulter *linked* integrity with tax cuts and claimed the American Revolution was merely a *tax* revolt. Most Americans understand that the Founding Fathers fought a revolution for *freedom*, not *money*. The Declaration of *Independence* was not a call for lower *taxes*; it was a *human rights* manifesto.

On another occasion Coulter claimed, "No, [the United States] is founded on *taxes* and *guns*. *Opposition* to taxes."[30] Sorry, Ann, but the United States was founded on *freedom*.

Surfeit of Success

Best-selling author Bill O'Reilly – and many other cultural critics – have addressed the dangers of elitism in contemporary American society. Ronald Reagan, the People's President, held to his heartfelt convictions with humor and humility, gracious to all, regardless of race, gender, class, political persuasion, or religious conviction.

Conservatives have long held that elitism – which invigorates big-government and centralized-planning schemes – is harmful to society. The Left recognizes that the rigid class distinctions in the Victorian era were wrong, though they erroneously project that paradigm on contemporary America (while ignoring its existence in the Third World).

However, elitism reigns in Coulter's world. Numerous profiles note Coulter's aristocratic origins and current lavish lifestyle. Consider this paragraph from a profile of Coulter in the *Westchester WAG*:[31]

> During the summer, she frequents "The Hamptons – I have lots of friends with places there – and Connecticut, where I visit with family." For winter getaways, Coulter can be found on the slopes. "Skiing is my biggest extravagance. I usually go to Aspen or Vail over New Year's."

Nice extravagances.

Elites can be very insulated from the identity and the reality of Mainstream America, often living in cultural cul-de-sacs, cut off from ordinary people. All that country-clubbing and elitist elbow-rubbing inoculates them from the cares and concerns of the common folk. In time, the common folk are seen as just that – "common" – undeserving of any attention whatsoever.

---

30 Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 6/7/97.

31 Emily Freund, "Ann Coulter: She May Be Right …" *Westchester WAG*, October 2002.

Reversing Welfare Reform

Coulter's elistist filter informs her personal and professional views. Her 2000 column on reversing welfare reform elicited quite a response from her fans. Coulter wrote: "the unemployment rate is far too low. … I'm looking for a presidential candidate who will promise to boost the unemployment rate through the roof, just so I can get a Whopper again."[32] What prompted her advocacy for higher unemployment?

Piqued at poor fast-food restaurant service, Coulter wrote a scathing attack *against* welfare reform. Here are a few excerpts:

> Like everyone else, I used to try to work around the abject incompetence so prevalent among the Washington, D.C., sales force. … If anyone ever opened my closets they would have thought I belonged to some crazy survivalist cult that believes in storing a year's worth of toilet paper and Diet Coke.
>
> But now even New York is run by the unemployable. Like the new virulent strains of tuberculosis, the new breed of incompetents are incurable. …
>
> There is no wage minimum enough for these people to be paid. They weren't even competent at being incompetent …
>
> … but their little life-training programs are standing between me and stuff I need. I now embrace the welfare system as a Safe Streets program for capitalism.
>
> … There is no reason to have malingerers mucking up commercial activity for the rest of us. I'm looking for a presidential candidate who will promise to boost the unemployment rate through the roof, just so I can get a Whopper again.

A Whopper?

Coulter's fans detected a touch of elitism in this, and other, columns. One person wrote, "I'm generally a fan of Ann Coulter … it sounded to me like the everyday rantings of spoiled rich women about getting good help."[33] Another suggested, "her attitude towards working folks was not sarcastic. It was demeaning. In her column, her attitude towards service workers came off as snobbish and elitist."[34] In agreement, another wrote, "But I do have to admit that 'Queen Ann's' column comes off as sounding pretty elitist. My advice to Ann would be to eat at higher class establishments. She can afford it; she's a lawyer."[35]

In another column, declaiming snobbery, Coulter wrote, "I'm not being a snob: In America's own little slice of the Third World, Washington D.C., you can't, in fact, drink the water."[36]

Perils of Prosperity

Like power and fame, wealth can corrupt character and harden hearts. The wealthy and powerful can come to feel privileged and entitled. Coulter is certainly not the exception.

---

[32] Ann Coulter, "Reform it back," 7/12/00. See also A.C. Kleinheider, "Miss Coulter, That's Not Mayonnaise," Etherzone.com, 7/31/00.

[33] Post # 16, Lucianne.com Forum, 7/24/00.

[34] Post # 14, Free Republic Forum, 7/24/00.

[35] Post # 40, Free Republic Forum, 7/25/00.

[36] Ann Coulter, "Space alien tells funny jokes in bathwater," 8/23/00.

Pride demands special attention. Goddesses need to be appeased.

Two examples should suffice. Having written a best-selling book promoting the impeachment of Bill Clinton, Coulter was irate when, in early 1999, she was literally excluded from an event celebrating Clinton's impeachment, an event which included the crème-de-la-crème of Washington society.

Coulter's home in West Palm Beach, Florida, is just a couple of miles from a television station. On one occasion, she insisted the station provide her with a limousine to take her to the studio for an television interview with a Fox News show. Her own car wasn't good enough for that trip and a taxi was apparently unacceptable.

But what happens when one's priorities and perspective become so skewed? Evangelist John MacArthur observes,

> In the thinking of popular culture, greatness is usually defined in terms of privilege, accomplishment, money, and power leading to some means of fame. A truer view of greatness, albeit less popular, centers on someone's lasting significance for providing far-reaching benefits to people, not just personal celebrity status; it elevates those who impact the world in significant and positive ways. But whether we measure greatness from the standpoint of popularity or from the standpoint of human achievement, both definitions fall woefully short of God's perspective.[37]

MacArthur's punch line prick's one's conscience: "It may be a shock to our superficial society to learn that greatness is not defined in terms of human achievement, athletic prowess, financial gain, political power, or celebrity status. Instead, it is measured by how one relates to the person and work of Jesus Christ."[38]

Pop icon Madonna (Like a Virgin, but not exactly) recently spoke about her quest for something more fulfilling than wealth and fame. In explaining her adoption of cabalism as a religion, Madonna said, "I was looking for something. I mean, I'd begun practicing yoga and, you know, I was looking for the answers to life. Why am I here? What am I doing here? What is my purpose? How do I fit into the big picture? I know there's more to life than making lots of money and being successful and even getting married and having a family. You know, where does it go? What is the point? What is the point of my journey and everybody else's journey."[39]

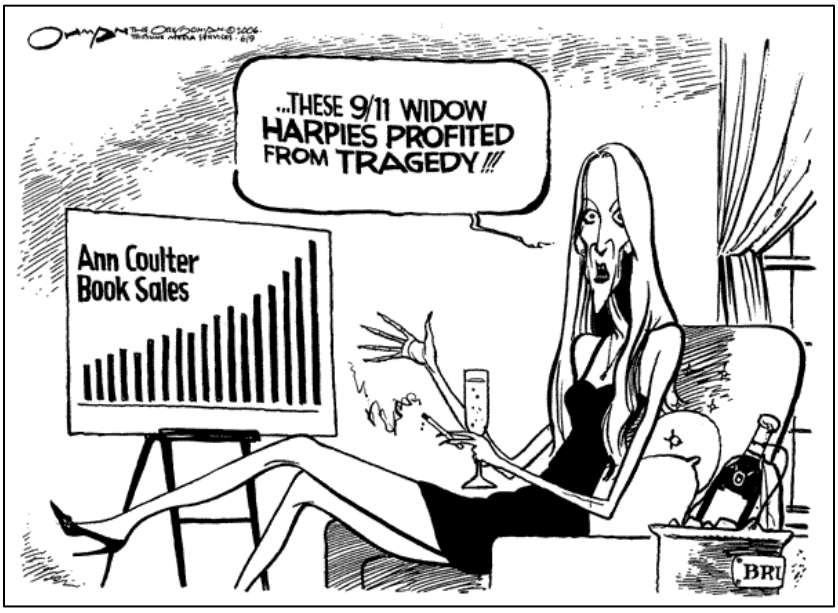
---

37 John MacArthur, *Twelve Unlikely Heroes: How God Commissioned Unexpected People in the Bible and What He Wants to Do with You*, Thomas Nelson, 2012, pg. 151.

38 *Ibid*., pg. 168.

39 Madonna, *Larry King Live*, CNN, 10/10/02.

Helen Rubin, of *Fast Company* magazine, similarly reveals the disconnect between achievement and reality. According to Rubin, "Of all the subjects we obsess about … success is the one we lie about the most – that success and its cousin money will make us secure, that success and its cousin power will make us important, that success and its cousin fame will make us happy."[40]



Power, wealth, fame, and glory are not what they are cracked up to be! Rubin asks why so many successful people are 'flirting with disaster in record numbers," acquiring their "money, power, and glory – and then self-destructing?" Her conclusion? "Maybe they didn't want it in the first place! Or didn't like what they saw when they finally achieved it." Maybe, as MacArthur noted, they had the wrong definition of success, the wrong measure of greatness.

Wisdom on Wealth

Certainly it is not wrong to be successful or to acquire wealth, but one's perspective must be right. That greatest of all expositors of wisdom, Anonymous, declared: "There is nothing wrong with men possessing riches. The wrong comes when riches possess men." Is Coulter possessed by her possessions?

According to American poet Ralph Waldo Emerson, "Without a rich heart, wealth is an ugly beggar." Abolitionist and preacher Henry Ward Beecher said, "He is rich or poor according to what he is, not according to what he has." And physicist Albert Einstein advised, "Try not to become a man of success but rather try to become a man of value."

Those cautionary comments were predated by the Preacher who, in Ecclesiastes, observed, "There is an evil which I have seen under the sun, and it is common among men: A man to whom God has given riches and wealth and honor, so that he lacks nothing for himself of all he desires; yet God does not give him power to eat of it, but a foreigner consumes it. This is vanity, and it is an evil affliction" (Eccl. 6:1-2).

Yes, our little vanities, whether of wealth, power, or fame, can consume us or destroy us. Jesus warned of "the deceitfulness of riches" crowding out one's spiritual life and thus making it barren.[41] Ironically, far from achieving the success we've sought – or think we've acquired – we can become utter failures where it really matters, in the heart.

MacArthur affirms that wealth itself is not, and never has been, the issue. Rather what matters is how wealth (or lack of it) matters to you: "Job refused the inclination to worship his material wealth. If you

---

[40] Timothy Keller, *Counterfeit Gods: The Empty Promises of Money, Sex, and Power, and the Only Hope that Matters*, Dutton, 2009, pg. 92.

[41] Mark 4:19.

worship what you possess – if you center your life on yourself, your possessions, or even your needs – you have denied God. You have in effect made your possessions your god."[42]

How many of us have been possessed by our possessions, or our power, or our glory?

Pharisees: Lovers of Money

As we have already seen, the Pharisees were the religious rulers and cultural critics of their day and they wielded enormous political clout. They thought that their power and wealth were signs of their righteousness and they used their possessions and positions for personal profit. The gospels record:

> Now the Pharisees, who were lovers of money, also heard all these things, and they derided Him. And He said to them, "You are those who justify yourselves before men, but God knows your hearts. For what is highly esteemed among men is an abomination in the sight of God" (Luke 16:14-15).

Bible scholars note that the Pharisees were "avaricious hypocrites."

> The Pharisees were not only proud and hypocritical; they were greedy as well. They thought that godliness was a way of gain. ... [They sought] to enrich themselves. ... To them, money was more real than the promises of God. Nothing would hinder them from hoarding wealth. ... They esteemed themselves successful because they combined a religious profession with financial affluence. ... The very ones who prided themselves on the careful observance of the law are exposed as avaricious hypocrites.[43]

Consider the words of one of Coulter's heroes, Alan Keyes, who more than a decade ago predicted, "I think there is a struggle going on in the [GOP]. It's a struggle between the Money-is-God Republicans and the God-is-God Republicans."[44]

Recent electoral outcomes are suggestive of who won that internecine battle.

Certainly, we can see which side Coulter chose.

---

42 John MacArthur, *Worship: The Ultimate Priority*, Moody, 2012, pg. 21.
43 William MacDonald, *Believer's Bible Commentary: New Testament*, Thomas Nelson, 1990, pg. 248.
44 Alan Keyes, *Federalist Digest 99-49*, Publius Press, Federalist Society, 1999.

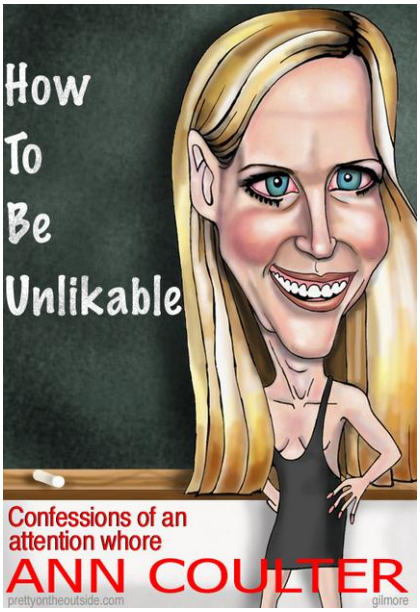
Chapter 8

The Lost Art of the Eulogy: It's ALL About ME!

"I really did admire and respect [John F. Kennedy, Jr.] a lot [for] having me write for him and proposing article ideas. He was very enthusiastic about my articles."
– Ann Coulter[1]

The Darkness Within

The subtitle of Coulter's fourth book, "*The World According to Ann Coulter*," positions Coulter at the center of "the world." But what does Coulter discuss in her book which explores "the world?" Let's look more closely at the title of that tome: "*How to Talk to a Liberal (if you must)*." Her book of world views (about her worldview to the exclusion of all others) is laser-focused on dialogue with the Left (but only if one absolutely *must* in some way or form interact with them). Not even dialogue, but *one-way communication*: "talk *to*" not "talk *with*." Remember, her stated purpose in communication is to "outrage" the Left. Hers is not a mission of proselytizing but of demonizing. Polemics for fun and profit.



So, too, in her eulogies.

During the span of about a decade, Coulter has written a number of eulogies – for her family, friends, colleagues, and heroes. Those eulogies contain certain patterns. Naturally, being of a personal nature, personal aspects of the eulogizer inevitably emerge. What is striking about the eulogies which Coulter has written is just how out-of-the-norm they are.

This chapter gleans what it can from Coulter's eulogies and does so chronologically.

As my books on Coulter have noted, we need to link the past with the present in order to gain insight into worldviews and behaviors. In doing so, we see a *continuum of conduct* which 1) continues in kind (e.g., prevarication, vilification, etc.) and, 2) escalates (e.g., from hate speech in the late 90s to elimination rhetoric in the following decades).

"Out of the abundance of the heart," so says Scripture, "the mouth speaks." Much of Coulter's commentary expresses and exposes who she really is; some are more self-revelatory than others. Following the movie theatre massacre in Colorado last July, one essay was especially evocative, laying bare her soul while seemingly disguising it (to be discussed shortly).

Coulter often seems to be unrestrained in the expression of her thoughts and emotions. In her eulogies, she reveals a darkness within which gives one pause concerning her sanity and her humanity.

---

[1] Ann Coulter, *Rivera Live*, CNBC, 7/23/99. The irony seems lost on Coulter: Kennedy ameliorated acrimony in political discourse by hiring *Coulter*?!

Before taking a look at those eulogies – primarily paeans to people she knew and loved – it behooves us to see how she treats those who have recently passed away.

The Recently Bereaved


Ann Coulter: Princess Diana Was an "Anorexic, Bulimic Narcissist"

Jul 2, 2011 10:45 AM ET | 59 Comments
by Joyce Eng

Follow @joyceeng61 636 followers

Tweet 48 Recommend 386 +1 0

Ann Coulter isn't a fan of *Newsweek*'s controversial Princess Diana cover, or the late princess herself.

Is *Newsweek*'s Princess Diana cover distasteful?

"I find it a little baffling when Americans get so gaga-eyed over a princess," she tells *The Insider* when asked about the cover, which imagined Diana's life at 50. "In particular Lady Di, who was just this anorexic, bulimic narcissist."

The conservative commentator, who was promoting her new book *Demonic: How The Liberal Mob Is Endangering America*, has expressed disdain for Diana before. In April, she called her a "nitwit hussy" on *The O'Reilly Factor*.

Ann Coulter

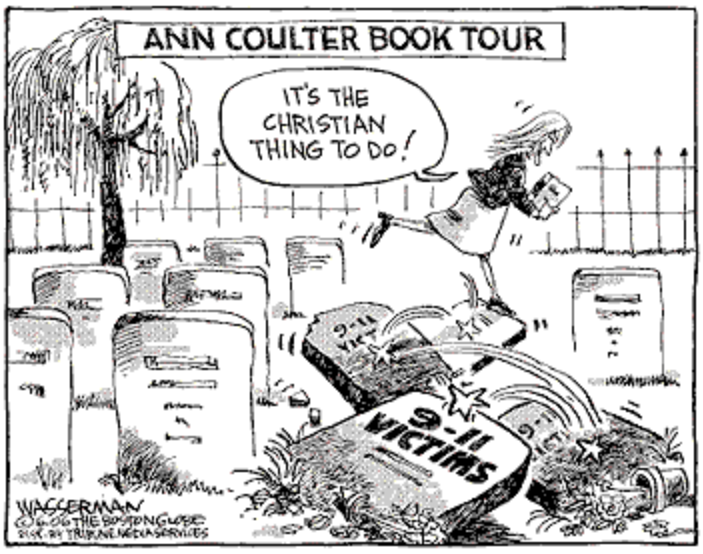
Coulter, however, had a higher opinion of the newest member of the royal family.

You may recall that Coulter was briefly fired from MSNBC in early 1997 for calling the then recently-deceased Pamela Harriman, U.S. Ambassador to France, a whore (or, in Coulter's more delicate nomenclature, a "round heel"). A few years later, Coulter was far more explicit: "Women like Pamela Harriman and Patricia Duff are basically Anna Nicole Smith from the waist down. Let's just call it for what it is. They're whores."[2]

Also in 1997, Coulter repeatedly lambasted the just-deceased Princess Diana as an unfit mother and whore. Again, using her own unique verbiage, "I still think [Princess Diana was] a round heel."[3] One week later, Coulter embellished her remarks: "Her children knew she's sleeping with all these men. That just seems to me, it's the definition of 'not a good mother.' ... Is everyone just saying here that it's okay to ostentatiously have premarital sex in front of your children?" After a caller asked Coulter to cite her own accomplishments, an enraged Coulter erupted: "[Diana was] an ordinary, and pathetic, and confessional. I've never had bulimia! I've never had an affair! I've never had a divorce! So I don't think she's better than I am."[4]

Fast-forwarding to 2006, in *Godless*, Coulter viciously attacked the liberal survivors of 9/11 victims, writing:

> These broads are millionaires, lionized on TV and in articles about them, reveling in their status as celebrities and stalked by grief-arazzis. These self-obsessed women seemed genuinely unaware that 9/11 was an attack on our nation and acted as if the terrorist attacks happened only to them. ... I've never seen people enjoying their husbands' deaths so much ... the Democrat ratpack gals endorsed John Kerry for president ... cutting campaign commercials... how do we know their husbands weren't planning to divorce these harpies? Now that their shelf life is dwindling, they'd better hurry up and appear in *Playboy*.[5]



Why did Coulter, using the politics of personal destruction, victimize these already victimized widows? Politics. (Or,

---

2 Ann Coulter, *Salon*, 11/16/00.
3 Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 9/12/97.
4 Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 9/19/97.
5 For an analysis of Coulter's diatribe, see "Chapter 6: I Am Victim, Hear Me Whine," in my free PDF book, *The Beauty of Conservatism*, which is available for download at www.CoulterWatch.com/beauty.pdf.

one could argue, for the *joy* of destruction.) As we have seen, Coulter seems to delight in besmirching the character and reputations of both the living and the dead.

Returning to her essay on the 2012 Colorado massacre, Coulter's rage was not directed toward the shooter and it only tangentially targeted the movie industry (maniacs don't kill people, movies motivating maniacs do)[6]. Rather, Coulter's rage was directed toward the grieving victims of this horrific and senseless tragedy.

Fear of Compassion

As backdrop for an utterly astounding essay on the movie theatre massacre, consider Coulter's words just two weeks after 9/11:

> I really am sick of [the candle lighting]. I think the candle lighting is bad. It's womanly. It's hugging. It's mourning. Mourning is the opposite of anger, and we're supposed to be angry right now. A flag, that's like a manly thing. … It's the candle lighting. … I like the flag, and I don't like the candles.[7]

Now consider her words in the wake of a tragedy which stunned the nation. Coulter began her essay[8] – to date, her only written words on the massacre – by diminishing the need for the victims to mourn: "I feel awful about what happened in Colorado, but can we stop the hugging and the teddy bears?" Grief? Forget it. Remember, Coulter brags that her family culture isn't into "emotional welfare."

Coulter's very next words attempted to present a bigger picture perspective in order to deflect the reader from the pathos of the event: "Just as society can become inured to violence, it can also become inured to sentiment." But do we want society – and the individuals which comprise it – to "become inured" to the very sentiments which Coulter decries? Published just six days after the mayhem, Coulter would have the victims just, what, get on with life?

Clarifying exactly what she means by "sentiment," Coulter continued, "There is nothing so hackneyed in the world of photojournalism as pictures of the hugging and the shrines with candles and teddy bears after a tragedy, with a piano softly trilling in the background." Of what is Coulter afraid? Compassion? Oh, I almost forgot, Coulter claims that "being nice to people" isn't part of the gospel of Christ, and we can surely sense that "being nice" is foreign to Coulter's lexicon.[9]

Her next words deny the real-life experiences of people who survive tragedy everyday: "This accomplishes nothing." Nothing?!

But wait! Coulter offered hope by reminding us that there is something we *can* do – something which is constructive – and that is "If you want to do something, please write a check to a good charity, a family financially harmed by the shooting, or send flowers to a specific person." So the solution to tragedy is not compassion, but money. *Money* is the answer?

---

6 Yes, I am being sarcastic here, lest someone, somewhere, believe that I am advocating censorship to curb violence.

7 Ann Coulter, *Politically Incorrect*, ABC, 9/25/01.

8 Ann Coulter, "Obscurity: No Crueler Punishment!" 7/25/12.

9 Evangelist and missionary Franklin Graham provides an example of how all of this silly candle-lighting stuff (with balloons, too) in official and unofficial memorial services following the tragic Columbine massacre provided comfort and healing for the grieving and an opportunity to proclaim the One who is sovereign on His throne in heaven. See Chapter Two of Franklin Graham, *The Name*, Thomas Nelson, 2004.

Yet Coulter's sole prescription for us directly contradicts what she herself has said in the past: "Compassion isn't writing a check," but rather, it "is working with someone, and, literally, and not in a sarcastic Bill Clinton way, feeling a person's pain and taking a person in."[10] That sounds a lot like compassion to me.

You may recall Coulter's oft-expressed prescription, what she called "a *slightly* novel twist" for disaster relief: tax cuts! Coulter advocated "How about, any area hit by a disaster doesn't have to pay *taxes* for the next five years? People would be *praying* for disasters in their areas."[11]

It's almost as if Ann Coulter has a *fear* of *compassion*. One recognized narcissistic trait is lack of empathy. Narcissists may be able to *project* empathy, but they often cannot *feel* empathy. That hollowness within may explain Coulter's own eagerness to exploit others and to callously attack those who are in mourning.

The noted playwright Eugène Ionesco wrote, "Ideologies separate us. Dreams and anguish bring us together." Survivors, sharing grief and compassion, become united like soldiers sharing a foxhole. Crises open doors for compassion – and for healing. But sadly Coulter does not grasp what most people intuitively understand. The very definition of compassion ("suffering with" another) contradicts Coulter's own confabulation.

Nothing is Sacred

During the 2004 presidential election cycle, Coulter denounced Howard Dean's public remorse and praise for his dead brother:

> But the Democrats have discovered a surprise campaign issue: It turns out that several of them have had a death in the family. … Howard Dean talks about his brother Charlie's murder at the hands of North Vietnamese communists. Bizarrely, after working on the failed George McGovern campaign, Charlie Dean went to Indochina in 1974 to witness the ravages of the war he had opposed. Not long after he arrived, the apparently ungrateful communists captured and killed him. *Hey fellas! I'm on your s – CLUNK!*
>
> Howard Dean wears his brother's battered 1960s belt every day. (By contrast, Ted Kennedy honors the memory of his deceased family members with several belts every day.)[12]

So, according to Coulter, sharing one's personal experiences of tragedy in a political context is bad form. But Coulter herself had previously used the tragic deaths of the Shuttle crew to political advantage in early 2003:

> I knew the media were up to something with their wall-to-wall coverage of the Columbia space shuttle explosion. The full story is: Shuttle disintegrated during re-entry; all astronauts killed, including some very remarkable people; very sad; NASA picking up the debris to figure out what happened. It was a plane crash story, only a lot more expensive. So why was the shuttle explosion being covered like the 9-11 terrorist attack?
>
> A quick review of the *Treason Times* laid bare the objective. …

---

10 Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 12/14/96.
11 Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 9/8/96.
12 Ann Coulter, "The party of ideas," 11/20/03.

> Here was the pithiest concentration of the multiple idiotic things liberals were saying about the space shuttle, the insincerity, the audacity, the smarminess – [a letter-to-the-editor writer] even worked in "the healing process." How he must have polished that little gem! The idea that liberals feel the shuttle explosion was a tragedy is patent nonsense. They were jumping for joy at this new excuse to denounce the "march to war." The nation is marching to war at such breakneck speed, it will be two years from 9-11 before we attack.[13]

In *Mugged*, Coulter wrote, "In death, they [liberal activists] deserve to have their graves desecrated."[14] Desecrated? Coulter desecrates the reputations of liberals in life (it's called the politics of personal destruction) and has even less regard for them in death. Eulogies are merely another means to attack and destroy.

This chapter of *Vanity* examines Coulter's eight published eulogies; the first three were reprinted in her fourth book, *How to Talk to a Liberal (if you must)*. In those three eulogies (of John F. Kennedy, Jr., Barbara Olson and Ronald Reagan), **Coulter lauds herself while using the essays as partisan polemics**. In the first and last, **Coulter criticized the bereaved families**. Surprisingly, Coulter expressed grief in the first two, but none for Reagan – her hero.

In typical fashion, Coulter uses eulogies as political platforms in which even the bereaved become targets. Coulter denounced the grieving Kennedy clan despite her friendship with and employment by the deceased and his wife. She later belittled the grief-stricken Reagans. Somehow "poor, dear Nancy" was "persuaded" by genetically-challenged Ron. Jr. to support stem-cell research. (Both, apparently, are addled – one by age, the other by genetic mutation.)

To the faithless, like Ann Coulter, nothing is sacred.

Coulter's eulogies typically follow a particular pattern, frequently including at least these elements: 1) praise for Ann Coulter, 2) criticism of the bereaved, 3) partisan polemics, and 4) personal expressions of grief.

To date, Coulter persists in capitalizing on personal tragedy for partisan political purposes.[15]

Within hours of the Newtown, CT, elementary school massacre, Coulter advocated for concealed-carry laws in Connecticut as the *only* way to prevent such tragedies in the future.[16] Meanwhile, Sean Hannity called politicization of this tragedy "nauseating."[17] Five days later, her next column reiterated her gun proliferation argument.[18] As it turns out,[19] while Connecticut has some of the strictest gun control laws in the United States, it *also* already allows concealed-carry permits.[20]

---

13 Ann Coulter, "Will of Allah' pre-empts Iraq invasion," 2/5/03. Coulter somehow missed the invasion of Afghanistan, which began on October 7, 2001. Meanwhile, the invasion of Iraq began on March 20, 2003, just six weeks after her column was published.

14 Ann Coulter, *Mugged: Racial Demagoguery From the Seventies to Obama*, Sentinel, 2012, pg. 97.

15 The word "eulogy" comes from the Greek, meaning "good words." Though admired for her wit and masterful way with words, the "good words" which should inhabit her eulogies are often missing or marred by *not* so "good words."

16 Ann Coulter, *Sean Hannity Radio Show*, Premiere Radio Networks, 12/14/12. Also see a series of tweets on her Twitter account.

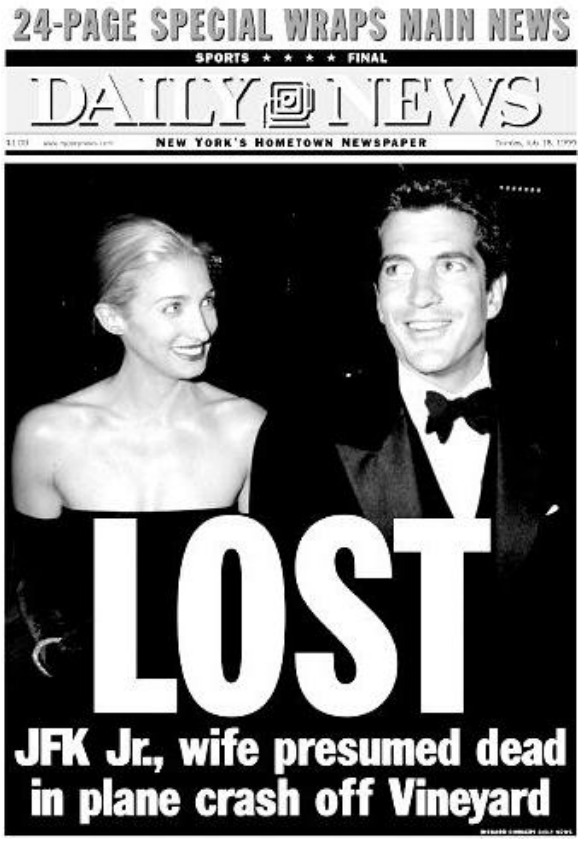
17 Sean Hannity, *Sean Hannity Radio Show*, Premiere Radio Networks, 12/17/12.

18 Ann Coulter, "We know how to stop school shootings," 12/19/12.

19 Drew Zahn, "Gun control laws failed Connecticut children," *WorldNetDaily*, 12/15/12.

20 See http://www.usacarry.com/connecticut_concealed_carry_permit_information.html, accessed 12/20/12.

John F. Kennedy, Jr. (January 25, 1960 – July 16, 1999)[21]



The deaths of John F. Kennedy, Jr. and his wife, Carolyn, shocked the nation and its impact would be keenly felt in Coulter's world. Kennedy's fulsome praise of Coulter in September 1997, and her inclusion in his world at *George* magazine, buoyed her journalistic ambitions and acted as a balm to counter criticisms of her commentary and character. Kennedy's death abruptly ended any comity she may have had at *George* and it extinguished the praise she had come to expect on a regular basis from this national icon who had become her enthusiastic mentor.

In her eulogy we find …

1. Praise for Coulter

"The first time I met John was at a *George* magazine luncheon at Le Cirque a few years ago to honor the magazine's 'Twenty Most Intriguing Women in Politics.' First of all, consider that I was named one of them …

"He thought it was tremendous that MSNBC kept firing me. …

"About a year and a half after the luncheon, John hired me as a regular *George* columnist. Wow!

"He read all my columns during editing, and would sometimes call to comment on them full of the sort of enthusiast praise that makes a writer want to write an even better one next time."

2. Criticism of Bereaved

"If you grew up when the most prominent living Kennedy was Teddy, a lot of the Camelot imagery is probably lost on you. So it was a little bit disconcerting, for this Republican at least, to be bombarded with the Camelot cant in connection with the death of John F. Kennedy, Jr. John was no run-of-the-mill Kennedy. …I knew John F. Kennedy, Jr. I worked with John F. Kennedy, Jr. And you, Senator Kennedy, are no John F. Kennedy, Jr."

3. Partisan Polemics

"John wasn't a part of the older generation of Stalinist liberals who try to censor differing viewpoints or engage in the "politics of personal destruction" to harm those who disagree with them. …

"That is why it is so painful to hear the media talk of John in terms of the Kennedy mystique of liberal mythology, or to hear him compared to that dysfunctional, airhead princess."[22]

---

21 Ann Coulter, "A Republican Tribute to John," 7/22/99, reprinted in *How to Talk to a Liberal (if you must)*, pp. 316-319.

22 Of course, "that dysfunctional, airhead princess" was Diana.

4. Personal Expressions of Grief

"That was the first time I stopped feeling lousy about my tenuous relationship with MSNBC. (And the first time I stopped feeling lousy about John's death was when someone sent me an email saying only 'maybe he's waving at you.' I keep waving out my window back to him now.)"

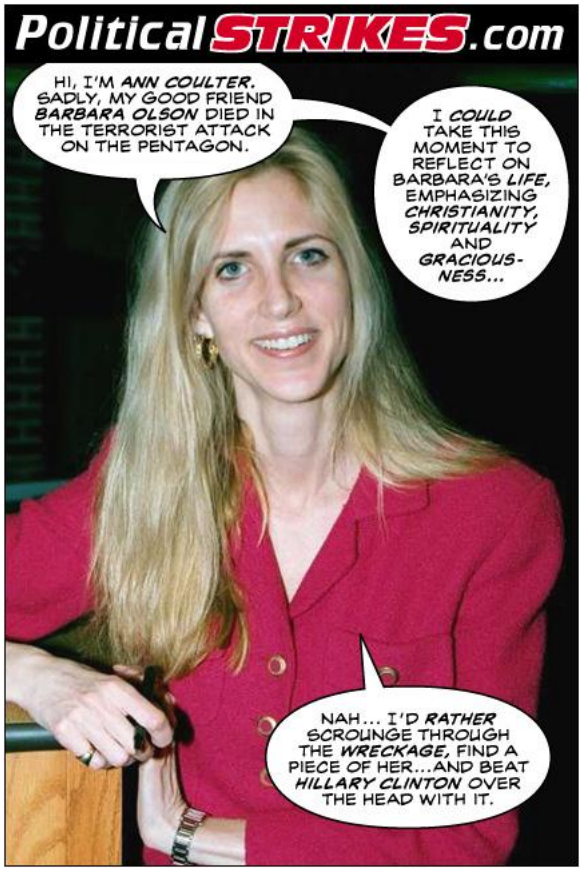
Barbara Olson (December 27, 1955 – September 11, 2001)[23]

Two years after her Kennedy eulogy, the nation experienced a horrific loss. Many Americans personally knew or were familiar with at least some of the victims of the 9/11 terrorist attacks. Over the years, we would come to know them and the bereaved as if they were members of our own families. In Barbara Olson, Coulter lost a colleague and a friend.

As I noted shortly after her 9/11 essay was published, "In her reverse eulogy to her fallen friend (Barbara Olson), Coulter explained how much the deceased liked *her*, used the Olsons' marriage as a foil against the Clintons, and concluded with a call for a Christian crusade."[24]

The memories and aftermath of 9/11 itself – the personal experiences of that unforgettable day – continue to have a profound impact upon Coulter's psyche. Her immediate response to that day's events were passionately expressed in her essay published the very day after the attacks.

As ably noted in the accompanying cartoon, Coulter used the death of a friend to praise herself and attack her ideological and political foes.



In her eulogy we find …

1. Praise for Coulter

"The last time I saw Barbara in person was about three weeks ago. She generously praised one of my recent columns and told me I had really found my niche. Ted, she said, had taken to reading my columns aloud to her over breakfast."

2. Criticism of Bereaved

NONE

3. Partisan Polemics

"This is no time to be precise about locating the exact individuals directly involved in this particular terrorist attack. Those responsible include anyone anywhere in the world who smiled in response to the annihilation of patriots like Barbara Olson. …

"Second, it was actually easy to imagine Ted reading political columns aloud to Barbara at the breakfast

---

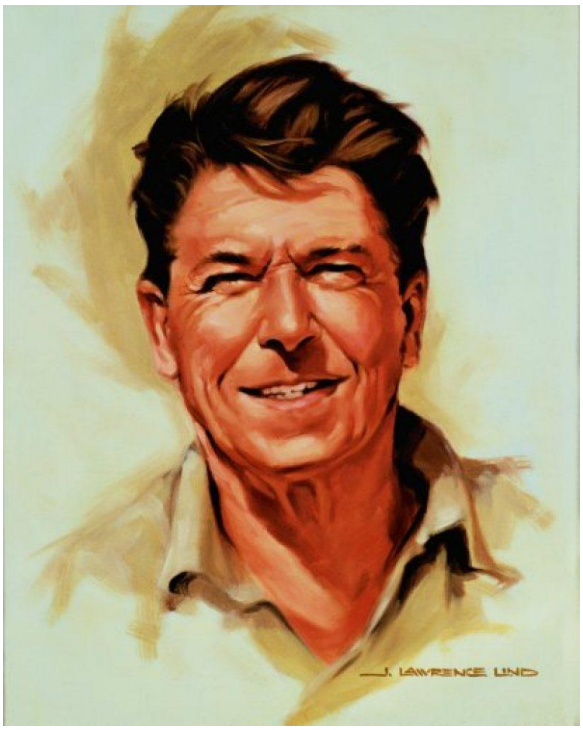
[23] Ann Coulter, "This Is War," 9/11/01, reprinted in *How to Talk to a Liberal (if you must)*, pp. 22-24.
[24] Daniel Borchers, "Right-Wing Warrior Princess," *BrotherWatch*, Special Edition # 1-2002, pg. 2.

table. Theirs was a relationship that could only be cheaply imitated by Bill and Hillary – the latter being a subject of Barbara's appropriately biting bestseller *Hell to Pay*. Hillary claimed preposterously in the *Talk* magazine interview that she discussed policy with Bill while cutting his grapefruit in the morning."

2. Personal Expressions of Grief

"Third, since Barbara's compliment, I've been writing my columns for Ted and Barbara. I'm always writing to someone in my head. Now I don't know who to write to. Ted-and-Barbara were a good muse."

Ronald Reagan (February 6, 1911 – June 5, 2004)[25]



Coulter was blessed to meet her supreme hero, Ronald Reagan, even though it was in his declining years. From the beginning of her journalistic career to the present, she is ever-ready to extol the virtues of one of America's greatest presidents. Quick to defend against all criticism, foreign and domestic, Coulter was nevertheless unable to extend compassion toward some bereaved family members whom Reagan loved.

In her eulogy we find …

1. Support for Coulter's Views

"*Newsweek's* Eleanor Clift says Bush is unlike Reagan because Reagan 'reached out, and he was always seeking converts.' That's true, actually. I think Reagan would have favored converting Third World people to Christianity. (Now why does that idea ring a bell?)"

2. Criticism of Bereaved

"The world's living testament to the limits of genetics, Ron Jr., put it this way at Reagan's funeral: 'Dad was also a deeply, unabashedly religious man. But he never made the fatal mistake of so many politicians of wearing his faith on his sleeve to gain political advantage.' …

"Someone persuaded poor, dear Nancy Reagan that research on human embryos might have saved her Ronnie from Alzheimer's. Now the rest of us are supposed to shut up because the wife of America's greatest president (oh, save your breath, girls!) supports stem-cell research. …

"But you can't blame Nancy. As everyone saw once again last week, she's still madly in love with the guy. She'd probably support harvesting full-grown, living humans if it would bring back Ronnie. Of course, I thought it was cute and not creepy that she consulted an astrologer about Reagan's schedule after he was shot. That didn't make astrology a hard science. But liberals who once lambasted Nancy for having too much influence on Reagan's schedule now want to anoint her Seer of Technology."

3. Partisan Polemics

"The three key ingredients to Ronald Reagan's sunny personality were … and (3) he read *Human Events* religiously but never read *The New York Times*. …

"Even in his death, liberals are still trying to turn our champion into a moderate Republican – unlike the religious-right nut currently occupying the White House! …

"To hear liberals tell it, you'd think Reagan talked about God the way Democrats do, in the stilted, uncomfortable manner of people pretending to believe something they manifestly do not."

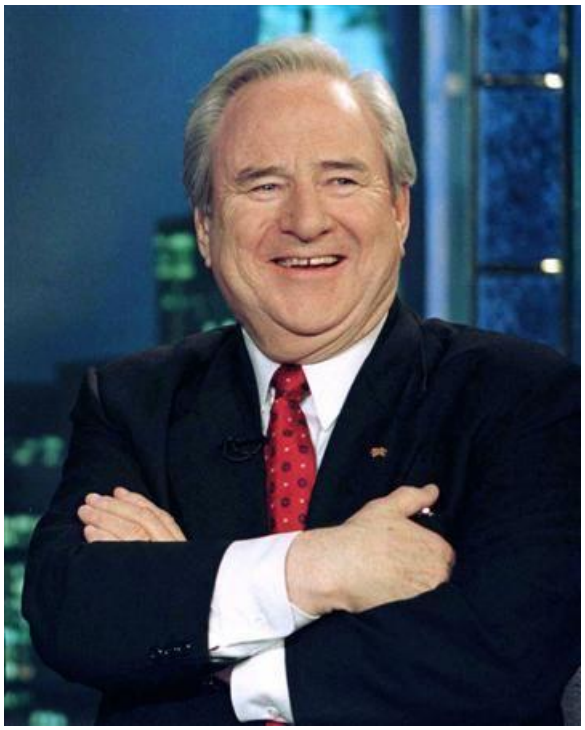
---

[25] Ann Coulter, "Let's Rewrite One for the Gipper!" 6/16/04, reprinted in *How to Talk to a Liberal (if you must)*, pp. 166-169.

4. Personal Expressions of Grief

NONE

Jerry Falwell (August 11, 1933 – May 15, 2007)[26]



Following the death of Rev. Jerry Falwell, Coulter clothed herself in the Christian righteousness of a fallen fixture on the Religious Right. Falwell, founder of the Moral Majority in the 1980s, was at the vanguard of a religious revival which sought to combat, politically and spiritually, the adverse effects of the countercultural Sixties.

Exploiting Falwell's character and reputation, Coulter's eulogy commended her own political positions as a professional provocateur and her own spiritual righteousness as a Christian warrior.

In her eulogy we find …

1. Support for Coulter's Shtick

"No man in the last century better illustrated Jesus' warning that 'All men will hate you because of me' than the Rev. Jerry Falwell, who left this world on Tuesday. Separately, no man better illustrates my warning that it doesn't pay to be nice to liberals.

"Falwell was a perfected Christian. …

"He was such a good Christian that back when we used to be on TV together during Clinton's impeachment, I sometimes wanted to say to him, 'Step aside, reverend – let the mean girl handle this one.' …

"(If you still think it isn't Christ whom liberals hate, remember: They hate Falwell even more than they hate me.)"

2. Support for Coulter's Position on Falwell's Retracted 9/11 Statement[27]

"Let me be the first to say: I ALWAYS agreed with the Rev. Falwell. …

"Actually, there was one small item I think Falwell got wrong regarding his statement after 9/11 that 'the pagans, and the abortionists, and the feminists, and the gays and the lesbians – who are actively trying to make that an alternative lifestyle – the ACLU, People for the American Way, all of them who have tried to secularize America. I point the finger in their face and say, 'You helped this happen.'

"First of all, I disagreed with that statement because Falwell neglected to specifically include Teddy Kennedy and 'the Reverend' Barry Lynn.

"Second, Falwell later stressed that he blamed the terrorists most of all, but I think that clarification was

---

[26] Ann Coulter, "Jerry Falwell – Say Hello to Ronald Reagan!" 5/16/07.

[27] Coulter ignored the fact that Falwell immediately retracted his statement – blaming the Left for 9/11 – while Coulter still defends the substance of his retracted statement.

unnecessary. The necessary clarification was to note that God was at least protecting America enough not to allow the terrorists to strike when a Democrat was in the White House."

3. Partisan Polemics

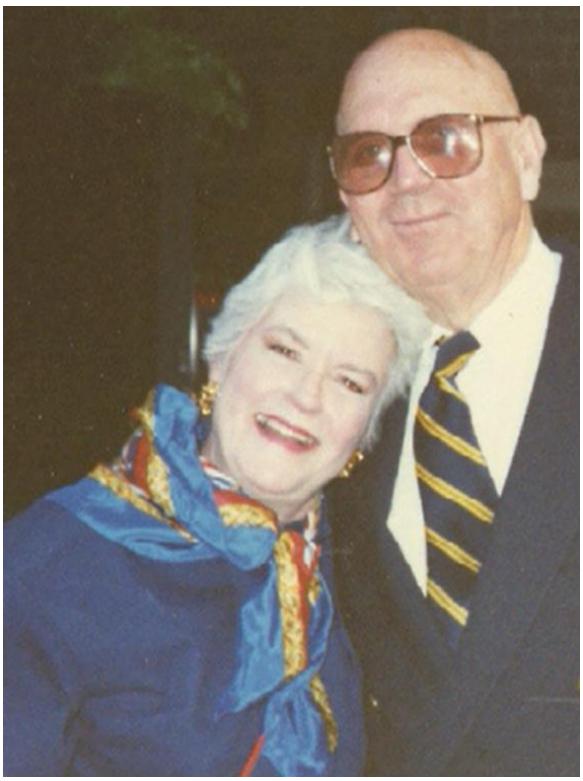
"This is as opposed to liberals, who just love sinners. …

"Despite venomous attacks and overwhelming pressure to adopt the fashionable beliefs of cafe society, Falwell never wavered an inch in acknowledging Jesus before men. Luckily, Jesus' full sentence, quoted at the beginning of this column is: 'All men will hate you because of me, but he who stands firm to the end will be saved.'"

Observations

Throughout, Coulter defends *herself* by exploiting Falwell – and Jesus! Her references to being hated, to not being nice, to being a perfected Christian, to being mean – all support her own (lack of) character and her own controversial positions, statements, and modus operandi, just as her exaltation of the righteousness of Falwell and of Jesus obliquely points to herself.

John Vincent Coulter (May 5, 1926 – January 4, 2008)[28]



Coulter's father passed away after years of declining health from dementia. Most of her books were dedicated to family, with Father and Mother being included most often.[29] As Coulter would write, "Your parents are your whole world when you are a child. You only recognize what is unique about them when you get older and see how the rest of the world diverges from your standard of normality."

Coulter provided poignant personal anecdotes but also exploited her father's memory to defend her own positions on the McCarthy era (you can read those portions on your own).

In her eulogy we find …

1. Partisan Polemics

"John Vincent Coulter was of the old school, a man of few words, the un-Oprah, no crying or wearing your heart on your sleeve, and reacting to moments of great sentiment with a joke. Or as we used to call them: men. …

"He hated unions because of their corrupt leadership, ripping off the members for their own aggrandizement. But he had more respect for genuine working men than anyone I've ever known. He was, in short, the molecular opposite of John Edwards. …

"Of course, toward the end, he probably didn't even remember he was a Catholic. But on the bright side, he didn't remember that Teddy Kennedy was a Catholic, either. …

"Now Daddy is with Joe McCarthy and Ronald Reagan. I hope they stop laughing about the Reds long enough to talk to God about smiting some liberals for me."

Observations

Within her moving eulogy, Coulter repeatedly attacked liberals and concluded with a wish that liberals be smited ("Now Daddy is with Joe McCarthy and Ronald Reagan. I hope they stop laughing about the Reds long enough to talk to God about smiting some liberals for me"). One blogger was inspired to pen this poem:[30]

Now I lay me down to sleep,
I pray the Lord my Dad to keep;
I also ask liberals He kill,
What I can't do, I pray God will.

---

28 Ann Coulter, "JOHN VINCENT COULTER," 1/9/08.

29 1st book, both parents; 3rd book, father; 4th book, mother; 6th book, Revolutionary War ancestor; 7th book, nieces.

30 TBogg, "The Healing Game," *Fire Dog Lake*, 1/12/08, http://tbogg.firedoglake.com/2008/01/12/the-healing-game/.

William F. Buckley, Jr. (November 24, 1925 – February 27, 2008)[31]

As she did in 2007, Coulter used the death of a legendary leader to her own personal, professional, and political advantage. In 2008, Coulter clothed herself in the conservative credentials of the just-deceased William F. Buckley, Jr., godfather of modern conservatism, who was renowned as a dignified, honorable and (certainly) civil human being.

In her eulogy we find …

1. Support for Coulter's Shtick

"Buckley's next book, 'McCarthy and His Enemies,' written with L. Brent Bozell, proved that normal people didn't have to wait for the Venona Papers to be declassified to see that the Democratic Party was collaborating with fascists. The book – and the left's reaction thereto – demonstrated that liberals could tolerate a communist sympathizer, but never a Joe McCarthy sympathizer. …

"In a famous exchange with Gore Vidal in 1968, Vidal said to Buckley: 'As far as I am concerned, the only crypto Nazi I can think of is yourself.'

"Buckley replied: 'Now listen, you queer. Stop calling me a crypto Nazi, or I'll sock you in your goddamn face and you'll stay plastered.'

"Years later, in 1985, Buckley said of the incident: 'We both acted irresponsibly. I'm not a Nazi, but he is, I suppose, a fag.'"

2. Partisan Polemics

"In his defense, Ike never demanded that camps housing enemy detainees be closed down. …

"(For you kids out there, Norman Mailer was an America-hating drunkard who wrote books.)"

3. Personal Expressions of Grief

NONE

Observations

Falwell and Buckley exemplified the two primary wings of modern conservatism. Falwell's religiously-motivated political activism on moral and cultural issues complemented Buckley's intellectually-powered paradigms, principally focused on geopolitical and socio-economic issues.

---

[31] Ann Coulter, "William F. Buckley: R.I.P., Enfant Terrible," 2/27/08.

Using Buckley, Coulter commended her own polemical attacks against John McCain, her defense of McCarthyism, and her use of gay slurs. Jonah Goldberg, Buckley's close colleague, observed about Buckley's singular use of the F-word: "It is one of the few times in Buckley's long public life that he abandoned civility, and he instantly regretted it."[32] Coulter *commends* it!

In each case, while paying her respects to her fallen public heroes, Coulter besmirched their reputations to salvage her own. Coulter resurrected Falwell's pronouncement that gays were to blame for 9/11 and Buckley's use, decades earlier in the heat of the moment, of a gay slur. Falwell immediately repented; Buckley was forever regretful. But Coulter used *their* moments of weakness to defend *her* present impudence, imprudence and impenitence.

[32] Jonah Goldberg, *Liberal Fascism: The Secret History of the American Left from Mussolini to the Politics of Meaning*, Doubleday, 2007, pg. 405.

Ron Silver (July 2, 1946 – March 15, 2009)[33]

In a surprising eulogy, Coulter revealed candid moments with one of her liberal friends, whom she regarded as courageous, in contradistinction to the liberal intelligentsia who just claim to be brave.

In her eulogy we find …

1. Partisan Polemics

"After an aborted operation on his cancer in July 2007, as soon as I saw Ron in his hospital bed, I told him I had Christians across the country praying for him. He said, 'That's good, because the Jews are praying for me to die.'

"Here he was joking only hours after being told his cancer was inoperable and he had mere months to live. Nearly two years later, he was gone. Luckily for him, he now faces a Maker who rewards bravery, but despises 'bravery.'"

2. Personal Expressions of Grief

"I wish I could ask Ron Silver …

"But I can't ask him anymore because Ron died of a rare esophageal cancer last Sunday. …

Observations

The concept of courage featured prominently in the seventh chapter[34] of her seventh book, *Guilty* (2009), as well as her exceptional eulogy of Silver. During her 2012 *Mugged* book tour, conservatives heaped accolades upon Coulter, calling her "brave" and "fearless" – in keeping with their long tradition of sycophantic adoration as observed in *The Beauty of Conservatism*.[35]

Sean Hannity praised Coulter, saying, "I know you're fearless."[36] However, if Coulter was fearless she'd live what she believes, but she doesn't. There's nothing brave about being brazen and bullying when you're rewarded for it.

---

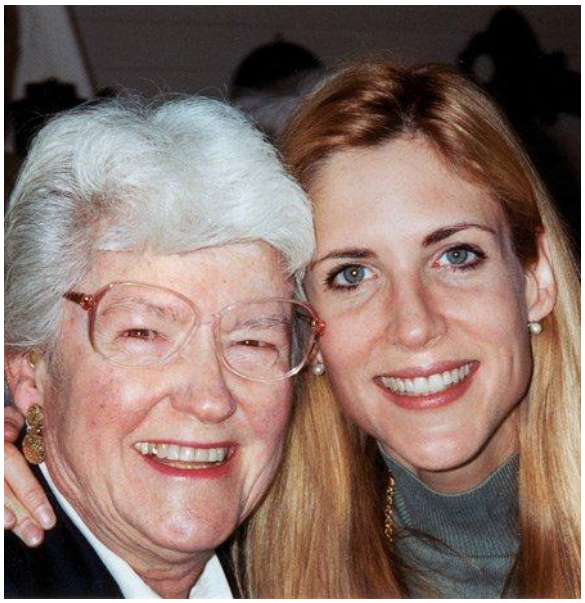
33 Ann Coulter, "Silver's Bravery Not An Act," 3/18/09.

34 "Brave, Beautiful Liberals."

35 See Chapter 5 ("… and Balls!"), Daniel Borchers, *The Beauty of Conservatism: The Seduction of Ann Coulter and the Cuckolding of Conscience*, Citizens for Principled Conservatism, 2011, www.CoulterWatch.com/beauty.pdf.

36 Sean Hannity, *Sean Hannity Radio Show*, Premiere Radio Networks, 9/28/12.

Nell Husbands Martin Coulter (February 23, 1928 – April 14, 2009)[37]



I am reluctant to criticize such an exemplary eulogy, one which is certainly in contention for her best writing ever! To criticize may be to quibble and nitpick. This essay alone reminded me of why I came to admire Coulter in 1996 and 1997. In it, we see an Ann who is comfortable revealing the softer side of Coulter, sharing intimate personal moments, expressing compassion, and (almost) forsaking polemics.[38]

I am providing three sets of extracts; the first isolates those few barbs tossed by Coulter at her foes (she just can't keep from saying something bad even when she is saying something good); the second highlights Coulter's pedigree, which was of supreme importance to her Mother and, necessarily became of supreme importance to Coulter; and the third showcases Ann's love for Mother.

As with her eulogy to her father, Coulter graced readers with numerous personal anecdotes about her mother.

In her eulogy we find …

1. Praise for Coulter

"At the 2004 Republican National Convention, I was taking my parents to a lot of the parties in New York and, at one of them, Herman Cain walked up to me and told me he was a big fan even though I probably didn't know who he was."

2. Pride in Coulter's Pedigree

"The only thing Mother wanted to be sure my brothers and I included in her remembrances were her contributions to the Republican Party, the New Canaan Republican Town Committee and the Daughters of the American Revolution.

"She was a direct descendant of at least a dozen patriots who served the cause of the American Revolution and traced her lineage on both sides of her family to Puritan nonconformists who came to America in 1633 seeking religious freedom on a ship led by Pastor Thomas Hooker. Or, as Homeland Security chief Janet Napolitano would call them, 'A dangerous right-wing extremist hate group.'

"Even back in the Puritan days, Mother's female ancestors were brought up on charges for their heretical dressing styles (and then sassed the judge). During the Revolution, one female ancestor, Effie Ten Eyck

---

37 Ann Coulter, "Nell Husbands Martin Coulter," 4/22/09.

38 This eulogy may speak more of Mother than of Ann, who wrote it for review by Mother prior to her death. Nevertheless, the words and style are Coulter's, albeit from a gentler and kinder Coulter era. It almost seems as if there are two Coulters: the loyal, loving, godly Coulter and the heartless, mendacious, mean-spirited Coulter. That Jekyll-and-Hyde contrast will be addressed in a future book.

Van Varick, contributed to the rebel cause by donating lead for bullets from the curtain weights in her home in what was, even then, traitorous, loyalist Manhattan."

3. Partisan Polemics

"Since I was a little girl, friends, relatives and neighbors would bring their problems to Mother. She had a rare combination of being completely moral and completely nonjudgmental at the same time – the exact opposite of liberals who have absolutely no morals and yet are ferociously judgmental. …

"As a family member, I can assure you that – much to our annoyance – she really did never have an unkind word for anyone. I mean, except Democrats, but not anyone she knew."

4. Personal Expressions of Grief

"A lot of people claim to be my No. 1 fan – God bless them – but my true No. 1 fan left this world last week. My mother quietly stopped breathing last Tuesday, as she slept peacefully, holding my hand.

"She was the biggest fan of all of us – Father, me and my brothers John and Jim. …

"Mother may have thought her most notable characteristic was her Republican activism, but, for the rest of us, it was her constant, unconditional love. She was a little love machine, spreading warmth and joy wherever she went.

"Every time she'd see me, even after just a few days' absence, she'd hug me as if I had been lost in the Himalayan Mountains for the past 20 years. …

"Now I'll never be able to introduce my Mother to friends and surprise them with her charming Southern accent.

"And I'll never see my mother's beautiful face again, at least not for the next several decades here on Earth. I've been looking at her across the room in doctors' offices over the past few years, thinking to myself: There will come a point when you won't see that face again.

"Her angelic face always looked like home to me. My whole life, as soon as I'd see my mother's face I'd know I was safe, whether I was a little girl lost in a department store or a big girl with a problem, who needed her mother. …

"So now she's with Daddy and Jesus. Every single day since Daddy died last year, Mother would say how much she missed him and gaze at his photo, telling us what an amazing man he was and repeating his little expressions and jokes. Even though I miss her, I'm glad they're together again."

Kaleidoscope of Content

This chapter provides a mixed bag of Coulter's memorialization of the dead, ranging from beautifully poignant to downright creepy, due in large measure to her skewed theological beliefs and the volatility of her emotional makeup.[39]

With her virgin foray into published eulogizing, Coulter commemorated the tragic death of one of her employers, **John F. Kennedy, Jr.**, for *his* praise of *her*, and repaid his kindness to her by attacking his grieving family. Immediately in the wake of 9/11, Coulter eulogized her fallen friend, **Barbara Olson**, by using Olson to praise *herself*, using the Olson marriage to attack the Clintons, and seeking to incite a Christian crusade.

Coulter's eulogy for **Ronald Reagan** was utterly unworthy of the hero whom she worshipped, quite contrary to his gracious and magnanimous spirit, and vituperative toward his loved ones. Her self-serving eulogies for **Jerry Falwell** and **William F. Buckley, Jr.** lacked the poignancy of personal anecdotes and exploited both their character and their careers to buttress her own.

Her eulogy to her father, **John Vincent Coulter**, provided a bright spot among her eulogies, containing touching memories in an engaging fashion, yet, somehow exploited her father's legacy in order to defend her own views of the Cold War and the McCarthy Era. Described as "creepy" by some critics, she used a tribute in honor of her father to do what she instinctively does: demonize liberals.

In eulogizing her courageous liberal friend, **Ron Silver**, Coulter again regaled readers with many interesting and poignant personal anecdotes, doing well in showing the character and temperament of her friend, yet using him as a cudgel to bludgeon those she hates (and those toward whom Silver held no animosity).[40]

Her eulogy to her mother, **Nell Husbands Martin Coulter**, was a praiseworthy paean to someone obviously deeply cherished and deeply missed and it provides a model for anyone wanting to give homage to a loved one. One could hope that the emotional maturity exhibited in Mother's eulogy would be indicative of larger, more substantive spiritual and emotional growth in Ann Coulter's life. One could hope.

Fully three and a half years after her eulogy to Mother, Coulter was elated over the death of retired Sen. Arlen Specter (PA), who died of cancer at the age of 82. Her first unseemly tweet appeared within hours of his death: "Arlen Specter has just switched to the Dead Party" (1014012). Doubling down, Coulter tweeted, "Arlen Specter's diagnosis – breathing 'not proven,'" (10/15/12) and "Arlen Specter Accused of Flip-Flopping on the 'Alive or Dead?' issue" (10/17/12).

Coulter loathed Specter for years for *political* reasons, but for her the political *is* personal. Moreover, Coulter hated him not because he was *evil* but because he was *worse* than evil – he was a *moderate*, a potential threat and political impediment to her utopian dream. Coulter's tweets reveal an unrepentant and unforgiving heart.

---

[39] Lest anyone conclude from the most compassionate of her eulogies that Coulter is a Christian – or a truly compassionate person – consider the words of our Savior: "But if you love those who love you, what credit is that to you? For even sinners love those who love them. And if you do good to those who do good to you, what credit is that to you? For even sinners do the same. And if you lend *to those* from whom you hope to receive back, what credit is that to you? For even sinners lend to sinners to receive as much back. But love your enemies, do good, and lend, hoping for nothing in return; and your reward will be great, and you will be sons of the Most High. For He is kind to the unthankful and evil" (Luke 6:32-35).

[40] Ironically, Silver, a non-Christian who actually attended church with Coulter, exhibited greater Christian charity and forgiveness than Coulter, an avowed evangelical Christian.

Chapter 16

Conscience and Innocence

"The torture of a bad conscience is the hell of a living soul." – *John Calvin*

From Self to Self

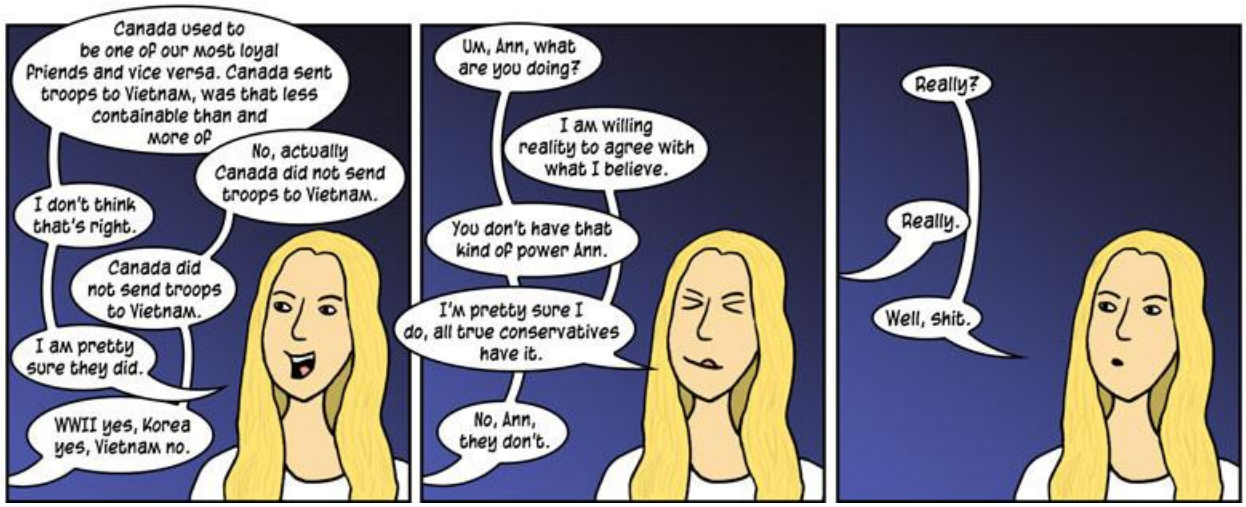
Ann Coulter is *defective* – as is every single human being. But Coulter is not like most people. Idols and goddesses cannot admit to being human. In trying to be – or *pretending* to be – perfect (without actually changing her behavior), Coulter has become a hypocrite while searing her conscience which recognizes the faults that she cannot confess even to herself.

To hide herself from herself, Coulter employs multiple layers of addictive thinking: *denial* that she has faults, *projection* of her negative thoughts, emotions, and behaviors unto others, and *rationalization* of her irrational and immoral beliefs and behaviors.

Unwilling to admit her faults and failures, ignoring and searing her stricken conscience, Coulter cannot bring her brokenness – and every human being has some brokenness – to God for healing and restoration.[1]

Needing to *be* – or at least *appear* – perfect, because of her ethos of performance-based love,[2] Coulter not only cannot admit wrong, she exhibits a judgmental attitude toward others, truly seeming "to despise weakness of any kind."

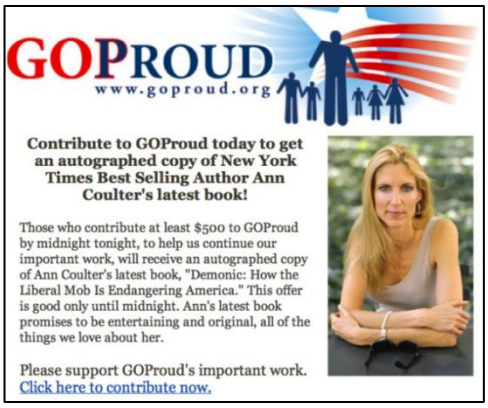
Coulter's pride is magnified as she turns a blind eye to her own faults and judges others for theirs. Her prejudice is heightened as others fail to meet her standards. She pursues power, in part, to control her self-image and how others view her. Fame and fortune add positive reinforcement of her self-identity. All of these facets of her life serve to enslave her to herself.



[1] Looking at some of the very flawed ancestors of Jesus listed in Matthew chapter 1, Christian author Beth Moore asks a relevant question: "How do you respond to the fact that the only perfect person in Christ's genealogy is Christ Himself?" Speaking for herself, she answers, "To me, Christ's flawed family history serves as a continual reminder of the grace of God in my life." (See Beth Moore, *A Heart Like Him: Intimate Reflections on the Life of David*, B&H Publishing Group, 1999, 2003, 2012, pg. 10.)

[2] Ann, God's perfect love perfectly loves even those who are imperfect, like you and me.

Faith in Nothing



In what, apart from herself, does Coulter have faith? In Conservatism? In the free market? In God? In all these areas, Coulter's faith has been demonstrably deficit.

During the last four presidential election cycles, Coulter compromised her social and cultural conservatism by distancing herself from (and even attacking) pro-life candidates. Now, Coulter has jettisoned core principles of economic conservatism as well.

Pre-election, Coulter advocated for taxing *wealth* instead of income.[3] Post-election, Coulter again compromised bedrock conservative principles, saying Republicans should *raise* taxes! On *Hannity*, Coulter advocated raising taxes, saying, "It doesn't mean you cave on everything, but there are some things Republicans do that feed into what the media is telling America about Republicans."[4] She wants Republicans to "cave on" taxes. Why? She's concerned with PR! Yes, Coulter is more concerned with *image*. She appears incapable of and unwilling to explain why she believes what she believes and, apparently, those beliefs she does possess are not really worth advancing.

Unlike Huckabee, who would advance Conservatism by *explaining* it, Coulter – as she has been throughout her career – is obsessed with *image*. Throughout her career as an author, Coulter has focused on polemics, not apologetics. Her stated goal has been to sensationalize, and to be offensive in so doing. With no interest in winning converts but only in winning a reputation, Coulter, now in her fifties, doesn't know how to change her *modus operandi*. Her *raison d'être* – to serve self and to receive adoration – remains unchanged.

What, exactly, does Coulter *believe*? For what will she *stand up*? Having faith in nothing outside of herself, she is adrift, being tossed to and fro with the political and cultural winds of the moment. If she only believes in herself and will only stand up for herself, why does anyone listen to her? What value does she provide to constructive dialogue? How does her engagement in the public arena benefit anyone (other than Coulter) when all she really cares about is herself? Where is her credibility?

An utterly remarkable incident in 2002 is worth recalling. Coulter's first book in four years, *Slander*, was being published and she was desperate for success. At that year's White House Correspondents Dinner, she pleaded with Ari Fleischer, President Bush's press secretary. What did Coulter want? For the president to be seen carrying her book! Coulter begged Fleischer: "I will do anything! I'll swear to you you'll like it! I will do anything!"[5]

Some have concluded that Coulter fears failure, lacks faith in herself. The proudest people are often the most insecure. Insecurity masquerades as pride. Some believe that Coulter really doesn't think she can make it without compromising, without selling herself. She doesn't really – deep down inside – believe in herself. Her deep-rooted insecurity and fear of failure have caused her to do what others would not because she fears that otherwise she could not do what others do.

Yes, Coulter is all style and no substance. There is no there, there. Vanity. Grasping at the wind.

---

3 *Ann Coulter*, *Sean Hannity Radio Show*, Premiere Radio Networks, 9/28/12.

4 Ann Coulter, *Hannity*, FNC, 12/5/12.

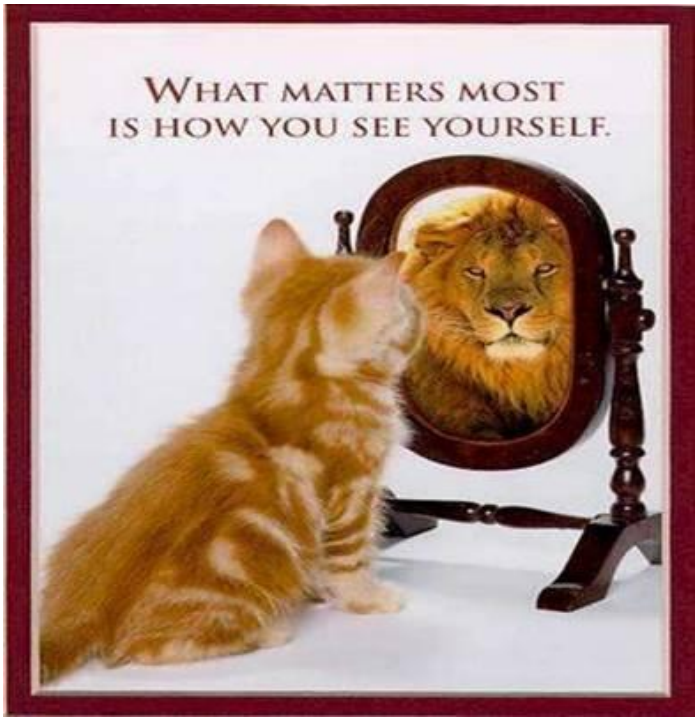
5 Sridhar Pappu, "Reporter's Party Makes George W. Bigger Than Ozzy," *New York Observer*, 5/13/02, http://observer.com/2002/05/reporters-party-makes-george-w-bigger-than-ozzy/.

Looking in the Mirror

My original working title for this book was *Ego: Looking into the Mirror of Ann Coulter's Soul*, but I soon realized that the subject matter was much deeper and broader than suggested by that title. Certainly ego is a huge part of the book, but only part. The futility of ego is important to grasp. Coulter's is a fraudulent life based upon lies and deception. For all that she has accomplished, what has she really achieved? In gaining the world, what remains of her soul?

When Coulter looks into the mirror, who or what does she see?

In the 1965 psychological thriller *Mirage*, Gregory Peck plays an idealist with amnesia who discovers that his mentor, philanthropist mogul Charles Calvin, has been corrupted by power. In the end, Peck's character admits, "I believed in Charles Calvin so much that I forgot he is only a human being." Many conservatives who believed in Coulter have been similarly disillusioned and have abandoned her to her own devices. Others still love the Kool-Aid, believing in her espoused ideals and projected image while ignoring, denying, or justifying her extremist rhetoric and behavior.



When I first knew Ann in 1997, she was driven to become number one. In her pursuit of power and fame, Ann was obsessed with her image. Whenever she was displeased with something that had been written about her – however minor or inconsequential – she would write a letter-to-the-editor (or delegate that task to a friend or associate).

It is a strange aspect of human nature that those who seem most proud and self-assured are often unusually plagued by insecurity and are more sensitive than most when it comes to criticism directed at themselves. Hence those letters and emails in rebuttal to perceived slights published in print or on the Internet.

Throughout her career, Coulter has carefully cultivated her image to maximize her goals, yet, there has always been a divergence between various aspects of her self-identity and the reality of who she really is.

In my first book, *The Beauty of Conservatism*, we saw Coulter's pride in her self-identity as one having beauty, brains, and courage – a heroic-martyr and icon of the Conservative Movement. In my second book, *The Gospel According to Ann Coulter*, we saw Coulter's pride in her theological and ideological roots: Christians going back to the Puritans, conservatives going back for generations. In *Vanity*, we see that pride, prejudice, and the pursuit of power, along with fame and fortune, have corrupted Coulter's character and subjugated her soul.

The titular character in the award-winning medical drama *House* once admitted, "*They* didn't break me. I was *already* broken."[6] Everyone is broken in one way or another, to one degree or another. In seeing Ann Coulter for who she really is – the real Ann Coulter – we see a person with great gifts, talents, and potential who appears to be more broken than most. Indeed, fame, fortune, and power seem to have negatively affected her, to have enabled her to be the worst person she can be. But in the television series, House came to grasp that the first step to being fixed is to recognize one's brokenness.

The worst person that Ann Coulter can be is not as bad as the worst person really bad people can be, but it is nonetheless still pretty bad. An unsavory character is Coulter.

Not a True Believer

Perhaps Coulter has never really been her "real" self. What if it has all been just an act, her shtick? What if, in playing the part so well for so long that she has become confused about what is real and what is not?

For the better part of the last decade, Coulter's political positions and spiritual expressions have become increasingly unorthodox and even bizarre, indicating a degradation of contemplation, conviction, and character.

Former colleague Eric Alterman once asserted that Coulter is a "true believer."[7] Yet Coulter has consistently proven that she is *not* a true believer. Coulter has demonstrated that she has absolutely no faith in the principles she espouses.

Rather, what Coulter believes in is what serves her interests best. Self-centered, Coulter parades pride as she pursues fame and glory. Ever concerned with her reputation – engaging in spin to turn events and controversies to her advantage – Coulter seems to be creating a specific self-identity, one she feels comfortable with, so that she can feel at home in her own skin. What masks does Coulter wear to hide from others and from herself?

One of Coulter's preferred self-identities is that of being a Christian warrior. But Coulter's theology, so-to-speak, is contradictory and often anti-life as documented in *The Gospel According to Ann Coulter*. Along with exposing major inconsistencies and contradictions in Coulter's views on the right to life and her peculiar interpretations of Christianity, she is also documented claiming "Being a Christian means that I am called upon to do battle against lies, injustice, cruelty, hypocrisy …"[8] Yet, Coulter exhibited all of those traits in her support of Romney.[9]

But reality always eventually sets in, as do guilt and shame. Flaws and imperfections can by literally air-brushed for only so long before the true character re-emerges.

---

6 Gregory House, "Broken – Part I," (Season Six, Episode 1), *House*, Fox, 9/21/09.
7 Annys Shin, "Blond Ambition on the Right," *National Journal*, 5/31/97, pg. 1088.
8 See Chapter 1 (Roots: Ann Coulter's Christian Heritage") in my free PDF book, *The Gospel According to Ann Coulter*, www.CoulterWatch.com/gospel.pdf.
9 See *The Beauty of Conservatism*, www.CoulterWatch.com/beauty.pdf, pp. 158-161.

Invariably, when confronted with a clash between her espoused culturally-conservative convictions (e.g., pro-life) and politically-correct pragmatism (e.g., choosing an "electable" moderate Republican for office), Coulter caves.

In her second essay on the disastrous 2012 election, Coulter blamed demographics. Her title(!!): "Demography is destiny." *Destiny*???

But wait! Do conservatives *really* believe in a destiny defined in racial and ethnic terms? Or do conservatives believe in *transcendent* values and principles – values and principles which *transcend* race, gender, and class? Apparently Coulter does not.[10]

The heroine of *Snow White and the Huntsman* (2012) asked a conscience-convicting question of the reluctant hero of the title: "Do you drink to drown your sorrows or your conscience?" What is Coulter figuratively drinking to drown out – her sorrows or her conscience?

Mugged – One's Conscience

Americans have been mugged by Ann Coulter who has turned demagoguery into a lucrative art form. Her latest book, which is praiseworthy in many respects, remains marred by its hyperbolic hatred of all things liberal.

Coulter is often brilliant, but often equally bizarre. Consider her latest controversies spotlighted in *Vanity*, or do a Google search on your own.

Narcissists can be very manipulative and act without a conscience – a deadly combination. People with a stricken conscience can become ever more censorious. And Coulter is certainly censorious.

In *Mugged* – and in her book tour – Coulter continued to display the various traits of addictive thinking. She just can't break the projection habit. For instance, on Fox News, Coulter called President Obama "a particularly divisive Democrat but they are all divisive."[11] Utterly forgotten in interviews like these is that Coulter's entire career has been built upon divisiveness. She calls herself a polemicist and controversialist for a reason – that's what she engages in. (It is worth noting that Jesus said, "blessed is he who is not offended because of Me" – Matthew 11:6.)

Remarkably, Coulter maintains a high degree of credibility among certain conservative circles. It is mind-boggling that despite the documented depth and degree to which Ann Coulter will lie about *anything* – personal or professional, insignificant or important, *anytime*, and *anywhere* – she still has credibility among a huge portion of the Conservative Movement and among Christians.

---

[10] See Chapter 10 ("Equality: Self-Evident Truths"), in my free PDF book, The Gospel According to Ann Coulter, at www.CoulterWatch.com/gospel.pdf.

[11] Ann Coulter, *America Live*, FNC, 8/16/12.

Lying is a way of life for Coulter. That's how she acquires and maintains relationships and furthers her career. Ironically (as is so often the case with compulsive liars), Coulter has come to believe her own lies. For instance, last year she again repeated a totally fabricated incident as if it really happened: "(Except at the University of Arizona, where college Republicans chased my assailant and broke his collarbone, God bless them.)"[12] There was never a broken collarbone (or other injuries) sustained by the assailants.

Pharisees – Hypocrisy

In addition to their other many flaws – or perhaps because of them – the Pharisees were notoriously hypocritical. Evangelist Franklin Graham cautions hypocritical Christians, "When people call themselves Christians they are identifying with Jesus Christ. When they wear crosses, or put Christian stickers on their cars, they are being witnesses for Him and are identified with the Name."[13] He continues, "If you wear signs of the Christian faith, be loyal to His cause, His teachings, and His commands."[14]

As we have seen, Coulter's hypocrisy has, to one degree or another, corrupted the conscience of the Conservative Movement.[15] (She even became the resident "expert" on liberal hypocrisy for Hannity is a series of episodes of his radio and television shows.) To remain silent is to aid and abet her ideologically adulterous behavior and to partake of her spiritual sins. But first, let's review why hypocrisy is so dangerous – and why the charge of "hypocrite" has had such power throughout the course of human history.

- **Hypocrisy is sin**. "Therefore, to him who knows to do good and does not do it, to him it is sin" (Jas. 4:17).
- **Hypocrisy dishonors God**. "You, therefore, who teach another, do you not teach yourself? You who preach that a man should not steal, do you steal? You who say, 'Do not commit adultery,' do you commit adultery? ... You who make your boast in the law, do you dishonor God through breaking the law?" (Rom. 2:21-23)
- **Hypocrisy renders judgment on the hypocrite**. "Therefore you are inexcusable, O man, whoever you are who judge, for in whatever you judge another you condemn yourself; for you who judge practice the same things. But we know that the judgment of God is according to truth against those who practice such things. And do you think this, O man, you who judge those practicing such things, and doing the same, that you will escape the judgment of God?" (Rom. 2:1-3)
- **Hypocrisy sears the conscience**. "speaking lies in hypocrisy, having their own conscience seared with a hot iron" (1st Tim. 4:2).
- **Hypocrisy deceives the hypocrite**. "But be doers of the word, and not hearers only, deceiving yourselves" (Jas. 1:22).

---

12 Ann Coulter, "Glenn Beck vs. The Mob," 6/29/11.
13 Franklin Graham, *The Name*, Samaritan's Purse, 2002, pp. 86-87.
14 *Ibid*., pg. 87.
15 See chapter 12 ("Hypocrisy: Defaming Our Lord and Savior") in my free PDF book, *The Gospel According to Ann Coulter*, www.CoulterWatch.com/gospel.pdf,

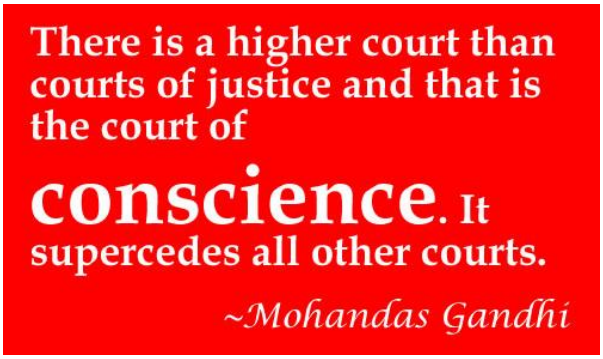
- **Hypocrisy leads others astray**. "But when Peter had come to Antioch, I withstood him to his face ... And the rest of the Jews also played the hypocrite with him, so that even Barnabas was carried away with their hypocrisy" (Gal. 2:11-13).

Coulter once said, "I'd just like to denounce liberal hypocrisy."[16] Let us denounce *Coulter's* hypocrisy and, to the extent the Right enables her, *conservative* hypocrisy. The inescapable fact is that Jesus sternly rebuked hypocrisy. His harshest words were directed at hypocrites. In Matthew chapter 23, Jesus' colorful rhetoric elicits astonishment from his audience then and Christians today.

Hypocrisy is an indication of a broken conscience and the more hypocrisy, the greater the brokenness. At heart, hypocrisy is a consequence of placing self first. Biblical scholar Dr. Michael Brown observes: "leaders like this are to be pitied, not praised, and to the extent they cause harm to others and bring dishonor to the name of God, they're to be repudiated rather than respected."[17]

One political observer wrote, "For me, her credibility as a conservative voice evaporated when she wrote a column saluting socialized healthcare. And when it comes to her and Bill Maher 'duking it out,' they probably went out for dinner afterward. Not so long ago, she defended Maher when he made some nasty comments about Rick Santorum's child."[18]

A former Coulter fan believes, "Coulter has an amazingly sharp mind, which is like a filing-cabinet chock full of facts-and-figures, ready to be thrown out and counter arguments from the left."[19] However, his idol has become tarnished in recent years: "But, with her over-the-top cheerleading of Chris Christie and Mitt Romney these past four years, I really no longer trust her very much. She's much more in tune with the GOP-Establishment and the northeast Ivy League crowd than the true, grassroots Tea Party conservatives."



[16] Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 12/27/96.
[17] Michael L. Brown, *The Real Kosher Jesus: Revealing the mysteries of the Hidden Messiah*, Front Line, 2012, pg. 59.
[18] CatherineofAragon, FreeRepublic.com, 10/14/12.
[19] Greene66, FreeRepublic.com, 10/14/12.

Courting Coulter

Despite Coulter's problematic polemics and bizarre behavior, she is rewarded by conservative organizations and publications. For instance, *Townhall* featured Coulter on its December 2012 cover, enabling her to recap the "Top Conservative Storylines of 2012."

As explored in Chapter 5 ("The Pursuit of Power"), Coulter frequently uses – and defends using – the R Word. A Special Olympian, John Franklin Stephens, with a huge heart made some very perceptive observations in an open letter to Coulter (see sidebar). Still, many conservative leaders and organizations injudiciously validate Coulter as a conservative icon.

Letter From a Special Olympian

Dear Ann Coulter,
Come on Ms. Coulter, you aren't dumb and you aren't shallow. So why are you continually using a word like the R-word as an insult?

I'm a 30-year-old man with Down syndrome who has struggled with the public's perception that an intellectual disability means that I am dumb and shallow. I am not either of those things, but I do process information more slowly than the rest of you. In fact it has taken me all day to figure out how to respond to your use of the R-word last night. …

After I saw your tweet, I realized you just wanted to belittle the President by linking him to people like me. You assumed that people would understand and accept that being linked to someone like me is an insult and you assumed you could get away with it and still appear on TV.

I have to wonder if you considered other hateful words but recoiled from the backlash.

Well, Ms. Coulter, you, and society, need to learn that being compared to people like me should be considered a badge of honor.

No one overcomes more than we do and still loves life so much.

Come join us someday at Special Olympics. See if you can walk away with your heart unchanged.

A friend you haven't made yet,

– John Franklin Stephens, "An Open Letter to Ann Coulter," Special Olympics Blog, 10/23/12, http://specialolympicsblog.wordpress.com/2012/10/23/an-open-letter-to-ann-coulter/.

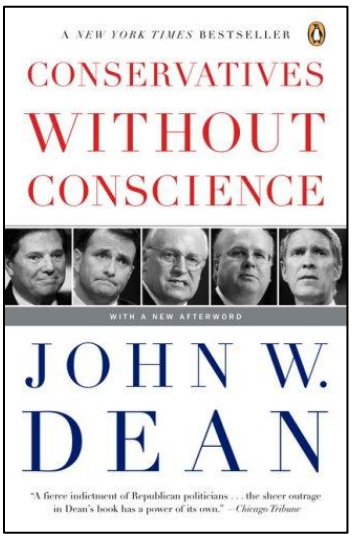
Perhaps her biggest public supporter, media mega-star Sean Hannity defends Coulter at every turn, salvaging her reputation during some of her most damaging controversies.

Recently, Hannity commended Louis Farrakhan's family values message, but stated that it is marred by his anti-Semitism. He further observed that Ron Paul's laudable fiscal message is marred by his "nutty" foreign policy. Hannity condemned the "colorful rhetoric" of some racist leaders of the Nation of Islam,[20] but he has yet to do the same with Coulter.

[20] Sean Hannity, *Sean Hannity Radio Show*, Premiere Radio Networks, 9/21/12.

Fully eight years ago, author and columnist Don Feder, a member of the "mythological" Religious Right which Coulter claims does not exist , brought liberals to task for their incivility while *defending* Coulter's incivility, in a remarkable column titled, "The Slander of Ann Coulter."[21]

Courting One's Conscience



At heart, the issues I have addressed in my three books on Coulter are matters of the heart, the conscience. They deal with character and integrity, with godliness and compassion – all areas in which Coulter maintains a solid deficit.

John Dean's book, *Conservatives Without Conscience*, is deeply flawed in its methodology and its conclusions, unequivocally condemning conservatism as a belief system with a lack of character and scruples, a liberal meme frequently promoted by the media and academia. To reiterate, Dean's book is a flawed book based upon flawed social science which itself is premised upon a flawed worldview with flawed criteria.

Nevertheless, some conservatives (and some liberals) do indeed seem to lack a conscience. I would contend that Coulter really is a conservative without a conscience, provable not by her ideology but by her rhetoric and behavior.

Can people lack a conscience? Or have they merely hardened their hearts so much that it appears they have? And do those with a hardened heart and indiscernible consciences have hope of softening their hearts and revitalizing their consciences?[22]

Mahatma Gandhi recognized the significance of one's conscience and its impact upon the possessor: "The human voice can never reach the distance that is covered by the still small voice of conscience." In the still of the night – or in the busyness of the daylight – that still small voice has a way of intruding upon one's thoughts and actions.

But what is a conscience and why is it important? The conscience is universally recognized as something beneficial for individuals and for society. Consider these proverbs which transcend nationalities and cultures:

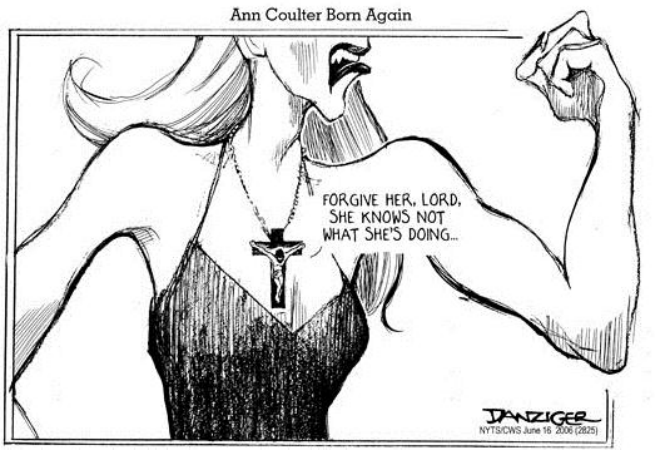
- "Conscience is the voice of the soul." – Polish proverb
- "A good conscience is a soft pillow." – German proverb
- "A clear conscience is the greatest armor." – Chinese proverb
- "A clear conscience is more valuable than wealth." – Filipino proverb
- "Conscience betrays guilt." – Latin proverb
- "Conscience is what tells you not to do what you have just done." – Spanish proverb
- "A guilty conscience is a hidden enemy." – Indian proverb
- "Conscience is only another name for truth." – American proverb

---

[21] Don Feder, "The Slander of Ann Coulter," *Front Page Magazine*, 10/7/04. A more apropos title would have been "The Slander by Ann Coulter."

[22] A number of people have expressed to me a hopelessness that Coulter can be redeemed. I do not share that view. The God I worship is a redeeming God for whom nothing is impossible.

Moreover, conscience knows no political, ideological, or religious boundaries. The noted Russian writer and activist Alexsandr Solzhenitsyn observed: "The line between good and evil passes not through states, nor between classes, nor between political parties either – but right through every human heart – and through all human hearts."[23]



The ancient Greek playwright Sophocles warned, "There is no witness so terrible – no accuser so powerful – as conscience which dwells within us." British poet Lord Byron acknowledged, "Man's conscience is the oracle of God," while the indomitable French emperor Napoleon admitted, "My dominion ends where that of conscience begins." Even American satirist H.L. Mencken, to whom Coulter likens herself, said, "Conscience is the inner voice which warns us someone may be looking," and also "Conscience is a mother-in-law whose visit never ends."

Biblically-speaking, every single human being has a conscience, which can be good,[24] bad,[25] weak,[26] seared,[27] or defiled.[28] Our consciences convict us,[29] bear witness[30] and testify.[31] Christians recognize that Jesus can cleanse our consciences,[32] making them pure[33] and without offense.[34] Our consciences are actually a primary means by which God communicates His will to us. It, like the Bible, is meant to guide us ("let your conscience be your guide"). Those with scruples heed their consciences.

John MacArthur offers additional insight into the nature of our conscience:

> The word conscience is a combination of the Latin words *scire* ("to know") and *con* ("together").The Greek word for "conscience" is found more than thirty times in the New Testament – *suneidesis*, which also literally means "co-knowledge." Conscience is knowledge together with oneself; that is, conscience knows our inner motives and true thoughts. Conscience is above reason and beyond intellect. We may rationalize ourselves in our own minds, but a violated conscience will not be easily convinced.[35]

Puritan Richard Sibbes described one's conscience as "*the soul reflecting upon itself*."[36] When King David prayed, "Create in me a clean heart" (Ps. 51:10), "he was seeking to have his life and his conscience cleansed."[37]

---

23 Alexsandr Solzhenitsyn, *The Gulag Archipelago*, Harper-Collins, 2002, pg. 312.
24 Acts 23:1; 1st Tim. 1:5, 19; 1st Pet. 3:16.
25 Heb. 10:22.
26 1st Cor. 8:7-13; .
27 1st Tim. 4:2.
28 Titus 1:15.
29 John 8:9.
30 Rom. 2:15; 9:1.
31 2nd Cor. 1:12.
32 Heb. 9:14.
33 1st Tim. 3:9; 2nd Tim. 1:3.
34 Acts 24:16.
35 John MacArthur, *The Vanishing Conscience: Drawing the Line in a No-Fault, Guilt-Free World*, Thomas Nelson, 1994, pg. 37.
36 *Ibid*., pg. 36.

Vanity, however, is in continual opposition to conscience. Indeed, it is its mortal enemy. François de la Rochefoucauld astutely observed, "If vanity does not overthrow all our virtues, at least she makes them totter." Pride is often regarded as the original sin and the father of every other sin precisely because of its all-consuming self-destructive nature. The temptation of pride – the will to power – can so easily ensnare those who trust in themselves, in their own intellect, their own power, their own wealth. The deceitfulness of self-absorption leads many astray.

Developing a good conscience, one which has been cleansed and is pure, requires a recognition of the reality of sin in our lives and a desire and commitment to live God's way of life.

"To deny personal guilt is to sacrifice the soul for the sake of the ego," MacArthur warns, writing, "[denial] destroys the conscience, and thereby weakens a person's ability to avoid destructive sin."[38] Ironically, "those who refuse to acknowledge their sinfulness actually place themselves into bondage to their own guilt."[39] The destructiveness of denial cannot be denied. Refusal to recognize the existence of a self-evident problem permits the problem to grow until it becomes unsolvable and its effects irreparable.

Coulter's Conscience

Simply put by MacArthur, "Remove the reality of sin, and you take away the possibility of repentance."[40] Instead of admitting her sin – the first step toward freedom from it – Coulter blames others for her own faults or she presents herself as a victim.[41] But Keller advises, "The secret to change is to identify and dismantle the counterfeit gods of your heart."[42]

This Coulter will not do.

Use it or lose it. That expression is true in so many facets of life. Knowledge and skills learned as a teenage but unused for decades disappear with time. So, too, with character. If one does not exercise character, it most likely will not remain and it certainly cannot grow. Morality muscles which are not exercised atrophy and die.

Coulter's conscience is in decay and dying.

At the time, Coulter may very well have believed in most or all of those things she espoused in the late 1990s, but now no

---

37 *Ibid*., pg. 38.
38 *Ibid*., pg. 32.
39 *Ibid*., pg. 34.
40 *Ibid*., pg. 11.
41 *Ibid*., pg. 21. MacArthur explains this modern cultural paradigm: "Victims are not responsible for what they do; they are casualties of what happens to them. So every human failing must be described in terms of how the perpetrator has been victimized. We are all supposed to be 'sensitive' and 'compassionate' enough to see that the very behaviors we used to label 'sin' are actually evidence of victimization."
42 Timothy Keller, *Counterfeit Gods: The Empty Promises of Money, Sex, and Power, and the Only Hope that Matters*, Dutton, 2009, pg. 166.

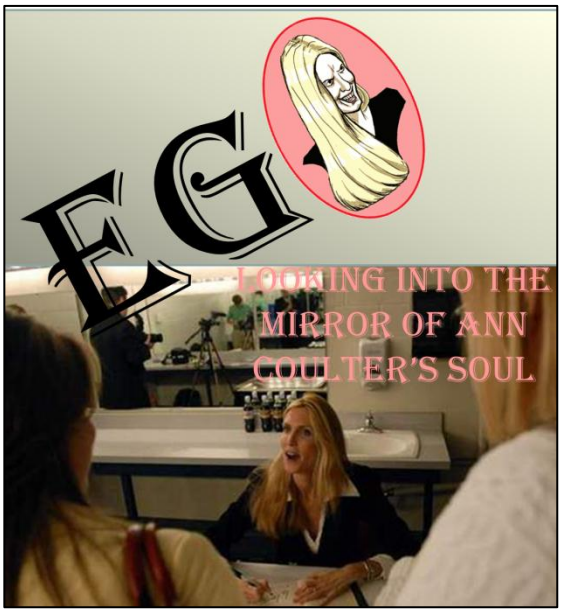
more. In each and every area of her philosophy, ideology, and theology, Coulter has compromised her beliefs by compromising her conscience. She has lost faith. Can she even say, "I believe. Lord, help my unbelief?"

Coulter has compromised so much, so often, for so long that she no longer knows what she believes and what little she does believe she has no faith in. This *drives* her even more to trust only in *herself*. Indeed, Coulter has no faith *outside of* herself.

If one were to ask Coulter – "What principles and ideals matter most to you, what issues do you find most compelling, what causes most move your soul?" – I doubt she *could* answer. She no longer *has* core principles which she would not compromise; Coulter no longer believes in anything.

A promoter of honesty and integrity in the public square, Coulter lies. A spokesman for the unborn, Coulter supports pro-choice candidates. An advocate for family values, Coulter boasts of her "total slutty look." An opponent of hate speech and elimination rhetoric, Coulter enthusiastically employs hate speech and elimination rhetoric. Decrying liberal hypocrisy, Coulter is a conservative hypocrite (that is, if she *is* a conservative). A Christian apologist, Coulter denies foundational teachings of Christ and calls other Christians "atheists" for their brand of Christianity.

Looking Into the Mirror



According to Coulter, "Democrats couldn't care less if people in Indiana hate them. But if Europeans curl their lips, liberals can't look at themselves in the mirror."[43] What does Coulter see when *she* looks in the mirror?

In Lewis Carroll's *Through the Looking Glass*, a sequel to *Alice in Wonderland*, Alice discovers that she is able to go through a mirror's reflection into an alternative world. Horror movies, such as *Mirrors* (2000) and *Mirrors 2* (2010), extensively employ the mirror motif.

Most people recall the Disney classic, *Snow White*, and it's memorable line "Mirror, mirror, on the wall; who's the fairest of them all?" Ironically, the aging queen is unwilling to accept the truth of her vanishing beauty; her pride demands the death of her rival.[44]

Consider that a *mirror* is the principal feature of a piece of furniture called a *vanity*! It is often in our vanity that our perceptions of ourselves become distorted and warped, as in a carnival funny mirror. Used properly, a mirror can benefit the user, and, spiritually speaking, can be used as a moral guide.

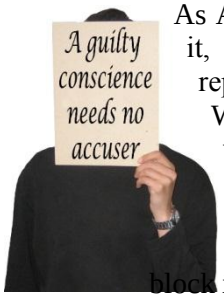
The apostle James observed, "For if anyone is a hearer of the word and not a doer, he is like a man observing his natural face in a mirror; for he observes himself, goes away, and immediately forgets what kind of man he was. But he who looks into the perfect law of liberty and continues in it, and is not a forgetful hearer but a doer of the work, this one will be blessed in what he does" (Jas. 1:23-25). Physical

---

[43] Ann Coulter, *Treason: Liberal Treachery from the Cold War to the War on Terror*, Crown Forum, 2003, pg. 288.

[44] In recent years, the *Snow White* fairy tale has been updated for modern audiences, with *Mirror Mirror* (2012) and *Snow White and the Huntsman* (2012) being but two examples. The television series *Once Upon a Time* revolves around one of its heroics, Snow White.

mirrors can help us freshen up our faces and get the dirt off. Spiritual mirrors (our conscience, God's Word) can open our minds and hearts to what is wrong in our lives and help us may them right.



As American historian and statesman George Bancroft put it, "Conscience is the mirror of our souls, which represents the errors of our lives in their full shape." When we look into the spiritual mirror of our souls, where our consciences speak to us, how we respond will determine whether we will do so with wisdom or not. Each response to our consciences, each wise response to what we see in the mirror, is a building block in our character, our lives, our legacies.

American playwright Tennessee Williams offered a pessimistic worst-case scenario, "There comes a time when you look into the mirror and you realize that what you see is all that you will ever be. And then you accept it. Or you kill yourself. Or you stop looking in mirrors."

What we see doesn't have to be all we will ever be. Indeed, if we accept our faults, we will increase in those faults. If we stop looking in mirrors, we will never have hope of changing for the better.

Looking into the mirror of God's Word and our conscience, with insight provided by the Holy Spirit, we can admit who we *are* and turn to God in repentance and faith to *become* what He wills us to be. Those with faith can look in the mirror, admit what is there, and strive to correct it.[45]

Absent the mirrors God provides all His children, none of us would have a North Star to look to, and all of us would be without direction and hope in this life. But God has given us the gift of a conscience for a reason – to help us and to guide us.

May your conscience be your guide.

[45] Casting Crown's hit song, "My Own Worst Enemy," expresses well the dilemma we all face when we see ourselves for who we really are and find ourselves unable to change. The writer "caught a glimpse in my rearview mirror" of himself, "my own worst enemy," bound to a past and a character he could not change, yet finding freedom in Christ and victory in "the battle for my soul." Readers are encouraged to carefully read the Parable of the Prodigal Son in Luke 15 and apply it to themselves, for our Father in heaven is *eager* to to run to his repentant, returning prodigal children. Yes, Ann, prodigal daughters are welcome, too!

Case Studies

"I'm perfectly willing to engage in wild speculation and unsubstantiated rumors." – *Ann Coulter*

1. Oh, Paula (Jones)! Ann Coulter's Betrayal.

In the summer leading up to Clinton's impeachment, Coulter boasted of doing pro-bono work for her law firm: "Pro-bono work is *all* I do these days. My law firm is a non-profit law firm."[1] According to a spokesman at the Center for Individual Rights, Coulter provided no pro-bono work for them.[2] Long after Clinton's impeachment took place, Coulter again boasted of her pro-bono work for Paula Jones. That year, she also boasted of her betrayal of Jones and took credit for getting Bill Clinton impeached.

2. (Linda) TRIPPed Up – Tripp Tapes Compromised

One of Coulter's "greatest moments" had national implications and international repercussions. In the early morning hours of January 16, 1998, Coulter illegally listened to illegally-recorded audiotapes of conversations between Linda Tripp and her friend, Monica Lewinsky, who was President Clinton's lover. Those tapes would prove crucial to impeaching Clinton. To this day, it remains unknown whether Coulter tampered with those tapes prior to them being turned over to the OIC.

3. Coulter for Congress: Only Scoundrels Need Apply

Seeking to unseat her Republican Congressman from Connecticut, Chris Shays, Coulter attempted to run for Congress herself. The Republicans and Libertarians rejected her efforts to run a "total sham" campaign. In retribution, Coulter attacked the Libertarians for being true to their principles.

4. In the Name of Elián (González)

The future of Cuban refugee Elián González, a five-year-old boy, garnered international attention, became a campaign issue, and may have impacted Florida's electoral outcome. Coulter made the custody battle all about fighting the Cold War over again, and lied about constitutional law to serve her agenda. She further boasted of her eagerness to *break* the law, thereby potentially endangering the child and his family.

5. Raising Cain for McCain and Fascist Christians (2000 Election)

Promoting George W. Bush for president – even before knowing his platform – Coulter besmirched the reputations of John McCain, Gary Bauer, and anyone else endangering a Bush candidacy.

6. Let's Get Drunk and Vote for McCain (2008 Election)

After trying to destroy John McCain, once he was nominated, Coulter boasted of helping McCain improve in the polls.

7. Mitt Romney – Ideal Candidate (2012 Election)

Coulter boasted of being able to prevent another electoral defeat by Republicans and attacked true believers (pro-lifers) for their integrity.

---

1 Ann Coulter, *Washington Journal*, C-Span, 6/8/98.
2 Author interview.

Case Study # 1

Oh, Paula (Jones)![1]
Ann Coulter's Betrayal

"There are lots of us busy elves working in Santa's workshop." – *Ann Coulter*[2]

[This first case study vividly brings to life all of the themes presented in Vanity*: narcissism, pride, prejudice, the pursuit of power, and the quest for fame, fortune, and glory. In it, we see a power-hungry wannabe power-broker orchestrating behind-the-scenes the intended downfall of a sitting president and willing to do whatever is necessary to accomplish that task. We also see themes from my previous books, particularly aspects of addictive thinking: denial of her wrong behavior, projection of her faults onto others, and even blaming the victim.*

Coulter was thrilled to belong to a secret clique seeking to bring down the Clinton presidency, to be a secret advisor to Paula Jones who would become her pawn in the scheme, and to secretly betray her client in order to get the president. All this she did under the cloak of secrecy to preserve her own job and her own reputation. Without remorse, utterly lacking in empathy for the one she would betray, Coulter would later contemptuously attack that person in public, adding to the scorn Jones had already endured.

In her pride, Coulter presumed to know better than Jones' lawyers and to know better than Jones' herself what was best for Jones and to act completely contrary to Jones' desires and interests. Coulter did not care at all about the consequences for Jones. In her prejudice, Coulter used, discarded, and then vilified the one she professed to befriend. In her pursuit of power, fame, fortune, and glory, Coulter – under the cloak of darkness – did these dark deeds.]

Coulter's Perfect Storm

The Perfect Storm dramatized the real-life story of a sword-fishing crew caught in "the storm of the century,") created by the confluence of weather conditions creating the perfect storm.[3] Many Republicans desperately sought to find the Perfect Storm (scandal) to finally bring down President Clinton, otherwise known as the Comeback Kid and Slick Willy, for his ability to evade responsibility for any number of scandals and imbroglios. With the Lewinsky scandal, conservatives thought they had discovered their political Perfect Storm.

In the midst of "serious" Clinton-administration scandals, Paula Jones' story of sexual harassment by then-Governor Bill Clinton seemed more a nuisance than anything else. Jones claimed her reputation had been damaged and she sought an out-of-court settlement to escape the limelight.

---

1 See Daniel Borchers, "Oh, Paula," *BrotherWatch*, 2002, http://www.coulterwatch.com/files/Oh%20Paula.pdf.
2 Michael Isikoff and Evan Thomas, "The Secret War," *Newsweek*, 2/9/98, pg. 43.
3 http://movies.yahoo.com/movie/1800352372/details, accessed 9/27/07.

(Jones: "I wanted this case settled. I always wanted this case settled."[4])

Enter the Elves

Right-wing hatred of Bill and Hillary Clinton began long before Clinton's first inaugural. Joe Conason and Gene Lyons documented what they regard as a ten-year campaign by the Right to bring down the Clinton administration.[5] Hillary Clinton exaggerated the extent of that campaign with her almost paranoid perception of a Vast Right Wing Conspiracy.

However, a small, tightly-knit cadre of conspirators, colorfully known as "the elves," served the purpose by enthusiastically pursuing the downfall of the Clintons. Their methodology included legal maneuverings and illegal machinations, investigative and tabloid journalism, media manipulation, betrayal of at least one colleague and of at least one client, and, perhaps, even tampering with evidence and unethical conduct with the Office of Independent Counsel (OIC).

The elves were a "secret clique of lawyers in their thirties … [who] were deeply involved for five years in the Paula Jones lawsuit … Ms. Jones never knew they worked on her behalf."[6] The elves began their work in the early 90s. George Conway, Richard Porter and Jerome Marcus formed the core of the conspiratorial group, searching out Clinton scandals to exploit and using their legal expertise and political connections to good advantage.

It is almost certain that Coulter was privy to their activities while on the periphery of the circle of elves during the mid-90s. At a critical juncture in the summer of 1997, Ann Coulter entered the fray, providing clandestine behind-the-scenes legal services for Jones. The secrecy, apparently, was for Coulter's sake because she reportedly feared the disapproval of her law firm, the Center for Individual Rights.

By then, she had become a key conspirator and major player since she alone, of all the elves, spoke at length with Jones and then, in early 1998, enabled her close friend, Jim Moody, to become Linda Tripp's attorney. Coulter later joked about the conspiracy, "I'm ticked off the Federalist Society is getting all the credit for this conspiracy – it should be the Dead."[7]

Coulter's involvement with both the Paula Jones sexual harassment case against Bill Clinton and Linda Tripp's taped conversations with Monica Lewinsky would prove crucial to not only undermining the Clinton agenda and tarnishing the Clinton legacy, but would also provide the impetus for impeachment of the President and, not coincidentally, provide Coulter with her first best-seller.

Getting the President

Coulter's unbridled hatred for feminism reached fever pitch with her 1991 unpublished essay for *National Review*. Her enmity eventually expanded to include all liberals, especially Bill and Hillary Clinton. Like many conservatives during the mid-90s, Coulter viewed the Clinton presidency as illegitimate, and, like

4 Paula Jones, *Rivera Live*, CNBC, 10/25/00.
5 Joe Conason and Gene Lyons, *The Hunting of the President: The Ten-Year Campaign to Destroy Bill and Hillary Clinton*, St. Martin's Griffin, 2000.
6 *New York Times*, 1/24/99.
7 Michael Isikoff and Evan Thomas, "The Secret War," *Newsweek*, 2/9/98, pg. 43.

many conservatives, Coulter wanted that presidency to end. Coulter's soon-to-become close friend, Rush Limbaugh, often spoke of "America Held Hostage" and his show featured a daily countdown to freedom. To them, the two-term Clinton presidency was a fluke (at best) or the product of a liberal media conspiracy (at worst).

At the very time Coulter was writing her *Human Life Review* essay attacking Supreme Court Justice Brennan for his misogyny, she was secretly "helping" Paula Jones in her sexual harassment lawsuit against President Clinton. Coulter's help proved disastrous for Jones and her family. In the end, Coulter would harm Jones more than Clinton had allegedly done – all because her end ("get the president") justified the means (destroying Jones' life).

Coulter's Betrayal

As it turned out, Coulter's goal was not to represent her client but to "get the president." Consequently, after Coulter gained possession of incendiary information – namely, the specific nature of Clinton's "distinguishing characteristics" which Jones claimed to be able to identify – Coulter vigorously leaked those details to the press for the express purpose of *sabotaging* Jones' delicate settlement negotiations.[8] As Coulter herself admits: "We were terrified that Jones would settle. It was contrary to our purpose of bringing down the president."[9]

There was only one thing to do: scuttle the negotiations by planting a rumor – by disclosing secret attorney-client privileged information. Just as Coulter's legal assistance to Jones was secret, as was her planted story, again to protect Coulter, not Jones.

To preclude settlement, Coulter approached numerous media outlets to leak a rumor that Clinton was afflicted with Peyronie's Disease. Coulter was furious with those media outlets which declined to publish her rumor, and she was elated at its exposure on the *Drudge Report*. From that point on, Coulter and Drudge would become close friends.

Coulter aggressively promoted her rumor, eventually finding fertile soil in the print media (*Newsday*), on talk radio (*Don Imus*) and on national TV (*Rivera Live*). Even the *Washington Times*[10] reported the rumor. Coulter's anonymously-released rumor hit the front pages of the nation's newspapers: "The *New York Post* ran a one-page story of the 'distinguishing characteristics.' So did the *Washington Times*, complete with Paula Jones' diagnosis as to what caused the distinction."[11]

---

8 David Daley, "Ann Coulter: lights all shining on her," *Hartford Courant*, 6/25/99.
9 Michael Isikoff, *Uncovering Clinton: A Reporter's Story*, Crown, 1998, pg. 183.
10 F.J. Murray, "Is This The President's 'Distinguishing Characteristic?'" *Washington Times*, 10/15/97.
11 Mary McGrory, "'Distinguishing' Journalism," 11/6/97.

That rumor definitively scuttled any chance of an out-of-court settlement between President Clinton and his alleged victim. Coulter took pride in anonymously exposing the rumor (and later using this published rumor she planted as source material) in order to thwart the legal efforts of Paula Jones' attorneys.[12] As Coulter explained, "I thought if I leaked the distinguishing characteristic it would show bad faith in negotiations. Bob Bennett would think Jones had leaked it. Cammaratta would know he himself hadn't leaked it and would get mad at Bennett. It might stall negotiations."[13]

Even Jones' own actual attorney, Joseph Cammaratta, was unaware of Coulter's involvement: "It was amazing to me to hear of her involvement with the case. I can't remember hearing her name."[14] Coulter worked "behind the scenes as an advisor to [Paula] Jones's strategists,"[15] leaked the bombshell privileged information to the media, and then blamed the Jones' genuine legal team for its release.

> Most women I know want further details on this DPC [Distinguishing Personal Characteristics]. We don't actually know that it was Peyronie's Disease, this was just a little tangent that Paula Jones' earlier lawyers went on to. All she said was that it was slightly bent. So there's my last parting comment because that's what women really want to know most about from what I can tell.[16]

> Ken Starr with 30 million dollars and the top prosecutors in the country hasn't been able to lay a finger on Clinton, and poor little picked on Paula Jones has completely destroyed him and humiliated him.[17]

Author Joe Conason later clarified matters for Geraldo Rivera, saying, "The *official* Paula Jones lawyers – Gil Davis and Joe Cammaratta, whom you've had on this program – *did* want to settle. It was the *secret* Paula Jones lawyers – George Conway, and others, including Ann Coulter, who's been on here many times – who did their best to *sabotage* the settlement."[18]

Consequences of Conspiracy

In a speech earlier that year, "Coulter further made her case that Jones was wronged, not only by the President, but also by 'the media, lawyers, and feminists.'"[19] Pardon me, but *Coulter* – as a member of the media, while a lawyer, and being a post-feminist – *certainly* wronged Jones.

During the scandal, Coulter expressed not one word of *empathy* for Paula Jones. Indeed, Coulter *gloried* in Paula's misery because Paula became a weapon to use against the President.

As a result of the sabotaged negotiations, Jones reluctantly went to court, the Lewinsky scandal erupted, and Jones' life was radically altered. Rather than receiving the settlement she so desperately desired, Jones entered media hell and gained a fractured family.

12 Ann Coulter, *Hartford Courant*, 6/25/99.
13 *Ibid*.
14 Author interview.
15 Mary Jacoby, "The Pundettes," *Capital Style*, December 1997.
16 Ann Coulter, *Vantage Points: Issues for Women*, Amazon City Radio, 12/5/97.
17 *Ibid*.
18 Joe Conason, *Rivera Live*, CNBC, 3/15/00.
19 Jillian Ruddiman, *Quad News*, http://quad.wcupa.edu/78/09/news/president.shtml.

Coulter, however, benefited, later boasting that she "got a bestseller out of it."[20] Meanwhile, Jones remained in media hell.

But why would Coulter care? She *never* cared about Jones! This came sharply into focus when Coulter exclaimed, "I *love* the facts about this case."[21] And then *gleefully* recounted the specifics of the Jones' lawsuit – even having memorized the paragraph numbers of the lawsuit. Others would have been *horrified* at the facts of her case – not "*loved*" them.

One might expect outrage over a sexual assault, or righteous indignation over abuse of power. Instead, Coulter's face, voice and body language exulted in pure joy. (Empathy for Jones was absent; present, instead, was exultation and anticipated victory over the Clintons.)

Hypocritically, the elves' secret machinations ultimately led to the public humiliation of both Jones (their client) and Tripp (their other client, whose tapes they unscrupulously obtained). In the name of preserving the "rule of law" (their refrain throughout the Clinton presidency), they willfully violated attorney-client confidentiality.

In the name of vindicating Jones' reputation, they propelled her to public ridicule, then, once their purposes had been served, Coulter condemned Jones as "trailer park trash" – the very charge the elves were purportedly repudiating at the outset.

In the end, the elves surreptitiously shaped history and irreparably transformed America's political and cultural landscape. As Coulter would put it: "I do think [Tripp is] a great American hero. We never would have found out about the corruption and illegality at the very top of the government but for Linda Tripp. If you imagine what the world would be like if Linda Tripp hadn't kept those tapes – a very different world."[22]

Despite the murkiness of their secretive shenanigans, sufficient details exist within the public sphere to gain a good grasp of their activities. Certainly, these affairs offer a glimpse into their character – so much so that Coulter would later gloat over her own involvement.

Ann Coulter, "attorney and self-admitted anti-Clinton elf,"[23] styles herself as the consummate champion of the weak and voiceless, citing her clandestine aid to Paula Jones as evidence. As it turns out, Coulter's service was self-serving, not selfless, and the beneficiary of her help became impoverished, not enriched.

Enter Linda Tripp

Conservatives laughed when Hillary Rodham Clinton accused a Vast Right-Wing Conspiracy of being out to get her husband. The "elves," though not "vast," certainly conspired. Their sole goal was to bring down the Clinton administration – irrespective of the truth or the law.

In fact, the elves became go-betweens for the Jones and Tripp camps, facilitating coordination between the Tripp team and the OIC. They certainly leaked confidential details of the Jones case to the press and, possibly, even to the OIC. The elves were "helping" *both* Paula Jones and Linda Tripp – a clear conflict of interest (see next chapter).

---

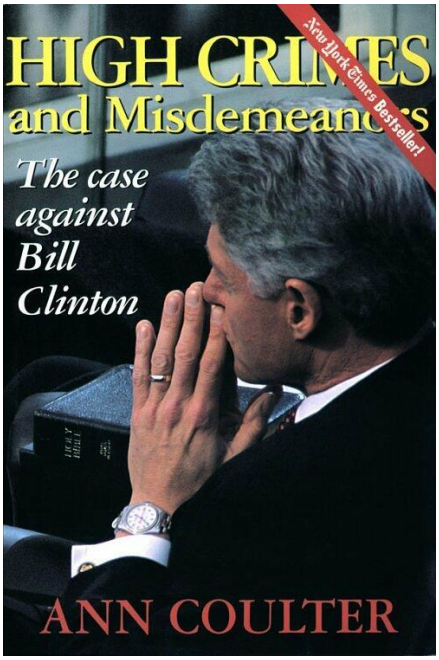
20 *Rivera Live*, CNBC, 11/16/98.
21 Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 6/7/97.
22 Ann Coulter, *Rivera Live*, CNBC, 5/24/00.
23 Geraldo Rivera, *Rivera Live*, CNBC, 6/7/00.

The elves provided the linkage between Jones and Tripp. According to Isikoff, the elves "were instrumental in combining the Jones suit and the Starr investigation."[24] These Federalist Society conspirators were at the nexus of those two critical impeachment-related events: scuttling settlement of the Jones case and involvement with the Tripp tapes. In both instances, the elves sought secrecy. They sought secrecy as desperately as they desired to bring down the Clinton presidency. However, Isikoff promised anonymity to the elves, only to reveal their identities in his book, *Uncovering Clinton: A Reporter's Story*.

Taking Credit

In the summer leading up to Clinton's impeachment, Coulter boasted of doing pro-bono work for her law firm: "Pro-bono work is all I do these days. My law firm is a non-profit law firm."[25] According to a spokesman at the Center for Individual Rights, Coulter provided no pro-bono work for them.[26] Long after Clinton's impeachment took place, Coulter again boasted of her pro-bono work for Paula Jones, managing to use the word "pro bono" seven times in one essay.[27] That year, she also boasted of her betrayal of Jones and took credit for getting Bill Clinton impeached.

After impeachment, Coulter then took credit for vindicating Jones' reputation (Coulter: "The reason we were doing it for Paula – well, was for Paula. She had been defamed and I think we can say we got her reputation back.").[28] Jones still endured media hell.



Nevertheless, Coulter had the gall to say, "I think Linda Tripp is a hero, too, and Paula Jones, to face those sorts of attacks I wouldn't have wanted to."[29] The reason Jones had "to face those attacks of attacks" that Coulter wouldn't have wanted to face was, in part, due to Coulter's betrayal of Jones.

Coulter publicly commiserated with Jones: "It seems to me, after seeing this in a practical matter, what Paula *Jones* went through, I don't think any of them would bring a lawsuit. *I* certainly wouldn't. How would *you* like to be called 'trailer park trash,' and have the entire White House apparatus focused on you as one sole little woman without a capacity to respond?"[30] Was Coulter finally coming to grasp the enormity of the consequences of her actions in the life of Jones? Not really.

---

24 Martin McLaughlin, "New revelations demonstrate role of right-wing lawyers, judges in anti-Clinton coup," www.wsws.org, 10/13/98.
25 Ann Coulter, *Washington Journal*, C-Span, 6/8/98.
26 Author interview.
27 Ann Coulter, "Spikey and Me," *George*, May 1999.
28 Ann Coulter, *Hannity & Colmes*, FNC, 8/17/99.
29 Ann Coulter, Young America's Foundation's (YAF) 21st Annual National Conservative Student Conference, 7/18/99.
30 Ann Coulter, *Rivera Live*, CNBC, 3/12/99.

Destitute Paula Jones

"Jones did eventually gain a settlement from Clinton in exchange for not appealing the decision, but it was only $850,000, one third the size she had been asking for, and all but $151,000 went to pay her now considerable legal expenses; meanwhile, her marriage had broken apart."[31]

In the course of time, Paula Jones was destitute and desperate. So, in desperation, Paula posed for *Penthouse*. "Had she settled the case in September,"[97] observed author Joe Conason, Jones "would have had three times as much money, we never would have heard of Monica Lewinsky, and it probably would have been much better for her and her family."[32] As it was, due to marital breakup, legal fees, back taxes, and a defense fund fiasco, Jones thought the only way out of her family meltdown and financial chaos was to discreetly pose for *Penthouse*.

Ironically, after abandoning Jones – without ever offering her any post-impeachment aid – Coulter denounced her as "trailer park trash,"[33] doing precisely what she had previously condemned Clinton supporters for doing. In Coulter's own words:

> Of the three "elves" [Coulter, Conway, Marcus] who worked on Paula's case secretly and entirely pro bono, I'm the only one ever who talked to her, and talked to her for hours and hours in order to help draft her responses to interrogatories. I completely believed she was the good Christian girl she made herself out to be in the press. I was doing this not just to expose Clinton, but for her.
>
> I was doing this for her ... [but] now it turns out she's a fraud – at least to the extent of pretending to be an honorable and moral person. … Now she's just the trailer park trash they said she was.

Naturally, Jones views things a little differently: "I haven't been out doing anything and trying to make a lot of money. I haven't been offered a book deal like everybody else in this huge thing has done. Ann Coulter's done books. I haven't seen her call me up and say: 'Paula, would you like for me to help you write a book, a really nice, decent book?' I haven't had any help from anybody whatsoever."[34]

On *Rivera Live*, Consaon noted, "She was kind of left holding the bag so to speak by people who claimed to be her friends and it's kind of strange for them to complain about what she's doing now."[35]

Paula Jones Interview

That's [Coulter's] opinion, and I hate that she feels that way, because I feel like here's the point: Everybody, even including [Coulter], they all wanted to rally around me during the time of the lawsuit. And all of a sudden, I didn't hear from anybody after the lawsuit had been settled or whatever to say: "Paula, how are you doing? Do you need some help or is anything going on in your life that we can help you out with? How's your day going?"

Nobody bothered to do that whatsoever. I was on my own. It's almost like they were gone and lost and no longer wanting to be my friend or contact me or anything. So – and I'm sorry [Coulter] feels that way, because I don't see how that can make me an immoral person, because I'm doing something that's going to benefit my children's future, because I'm a single mother now – and pay for taxes. And what's wrong with that?

I haven't been out doing anything and trying to make a lot of money. I haven't been offered a book deal like everybody else in this huge thing has done. Ann Coulter's done books. I haven't seen her call me up and say: "Paula, would you like for me to help you write a book, a really nice, decent [book]?" I haven't had any help from anybody whatsoever.

And so why is it so bad for me to make a decision based on somebody offering me something when I knew I needed help? And why is that so awful for posing for [*Penthouse*] – I mean, I could have did something a lot worse, and I wouldn't do that. So – I don't think there is – that's her opinion.

– Paula Jones, *Larry King Live*, CNN, 10/24/00.

---

31 http://www.dkosopedia.com/wiki/Paula_Jones, accessed 12/21/06.
32 Joe Conason, *The Edge with Paula Zahn*, 10/26/00.
33 Ann Coulter, "Clinton sure Can pick 'em," 10/30/00.
34 Paula Jones, *Larry King Live*, CNN, 10/24/00.
35 Joe Conason, *Rivera Live*, CNBC, 10/26/00.

Defender of the Weak and Voiceless?

To recap, as a clandestine attorney for Paula Jones, Coulter 1) (pre-Monica) sabotaged her own client's quest for an out-of-court settlement in order to "get the president," 2) (post-impeachment) took credit for vindicating Jones' reputation and commiserated with Jones for having "to face those sorts of attacks I wouldn't have wanted to" even though she had helped put Jones into that position, and, 3) (post-Penthouse) condemned Jones as "trailer-park trash."

Coulter regularly rails against abuses by the rich and powerful against the weak and voiceless. As it turns out, her condemnation of Jones should have been self-directed: "I totally believed she was the good Christian girl she made herself out to be. … now it turns out she's a fraud – at least to the extent of pretending to be an honorable and moral person." But it has been abundantly demonstrated that Coulter is a fraud and certainly not "the good Christian girl she [makes] herself out to be."

Put another way, Coulter *leaked* attorney-client privileged information to *thwart* Paula Jones' settlement attempts, thereby propelling Jones into a media maelstrom which Coulter says she herself wouldn't want to experience, then took *credit* for vindication of Jones' reputation, and later dismissed *Jones* as "gross" for being a "fraud … pretending to be an honorable and moral person."

Why did Coulter even issue a statement on Jones? Could it be to *trash* Jones and her credibility because Jones was *now* exposing how she was *used* by people like *Coulter*?

But Coulter would come to relish the abuse of power when that power is in her hands. Power and control are essential traits for those whose pride and disdain for others can dehumanize their inferiors and idolize themselves.

Case Study # 2

(Linda) TRIPPed Up![1]

"I don't mind reliving the greatest night of my life over and over and over again. I was dancing a jig. I was bouncing off the walls." – *Ann Coulter*

[A similar pattern emerged with the saga of Linda Tripp's tapes, an intertwined case study with very similar motivations and patterns of deceit. The elves were successful in thwarting Paula Jones, ensuring that her sexual harassment case against Bill Clinton would proceed, and increasing the likelihood that Clinton would be compelled to testify. The essential second phase of their plan needed to be put into effect, namely proving other instances of sexual harassment. Enter Linda Tripp and her taped conservations with White House intern Monica Lewinsky. Those tapes needed to be provided to the OIC – and provided at the right *time.*

Coulter recommended her best friend, Jim Moody, to be Tripp's attorney, then acquired Tripp's attorney-client privileged tapes from Moody – listening to them with some of the "elves" – prior to those tapes being turned over to the OIC. Coulter did this secretly, literally in the dead of night, then lied about hearing those tapes and lied about her source for those tapes. Coulter may have even altered one or more of those tapes!

While keeping secret her involvement with both Jones and Tripp – a conflict of interest in and of itself – Coulter relished talking circumspectly about that involvement. Coulter even sent advisory emails to her friends notifying them of her TV appearances on these matters of "national importance."]

Linda Tripp's New Lawyer

A rather curious sequence of events enabled Coulter to gain access to those critical tapes illegally recorded by Linda Tripp before they were turned over to the OIC. Coulter recommended one of her closest friends, Jim Moody, to represent Tripp, who accepted that recommendation despite his inexperience in that field of law. Moody replaced Kirby Behre as Tripp's attorney.

Moody soon took possession of Tripp's tapes. Behre confirmed that while the tapes were in his possession, no unauthorized individuals had access to them and no copies of those tapes were made.[2] Within hours, Coulter had access to those very tapes from Moody, whom she herself had suggested represent Tripp.

Coulter would later engage in damage control, writing, "Moody came in to the case, Toobin says, when New York lawyer George Conway 'remembered an old friend in Washington' – Jim Moody. George Conway barely knew Jim Moody; the two had met only briefly once or twice before in group settings. It certainly was not George Conway who thought of suggesting his name to Tripp."[3] Coulter is right. It was Coulter herself who thought of suggesting Moody as Tripp's lawyer. And it was Coulter to whom Tripp's tapes were brought.

---

1 See Daniel Borchers, "Tripped Up," *BrotherWatch*, 2002, http://www.coulterwatch.com/files/Tripped%20Up.pdf.
2 Author interview.
3 Ann Coulter, "Vast concoctions II," 3/10/00.

Early Morning Rendezvous

One of Coulter's "greatest moments" had national implications and international repercussions. In the early morning hours of January 16, 1998, Coulter illegally listened to illegally-recorded audiotapes of conversations between Linda Tripp and her friend, Monica Lewinsky, who was President Clinton's lover. Those tapes would prove crucial to impeaching Clinton and would pave Coulter's path to glory, a glory which would somehow never transcend Coulter's deep insecurity and low self-esteem.

Coulter could not contain her joy over gaining possession – secretly and illegally – of such a critical piece of evidence. She exclaimed, "I must say, I don't mind reliving the greatest night of my life over and over again. I was dancing a jig. I was bouncing off the walls."[4] To this day, it remains unknown whether Coulter tampered with those tapes prior to them being turned over to the OIC.

Five people, all lawyers, listened to those explosive tapes during the early morning hours of January 16, 1998. Conway and Moody were physically present with Coulter in her apartment, while Marcus and Porter participated via telephone conference call. Significantly, with the exception of Moody, *all* of those present (either in person or via telephone) have refused to comment on those events for this book.

Given Moody's paranoid cloak-and-dagger evasive tactics[5] after obtaining the tapes from Kirby, why would he wait till the afternoon of the 16th to turn them over to Starr's office? He certainly wasn't listening to them at his home on his antiquated tape recorder (the stated reason for playing them at Coulter's apartment). Where were they and what was done with them?

The details are murky, but it is unquestioned that Coulter was in possession of those tapes – *without the approval of Linda Tripp* – before they were turned over to Ken Starr's office. Coulter was ecstatic: "I must say, I don't mind reliving the greatest night of my life over and over again. I was dancing a jig. I was bouncing off the walls."[6]

The critical time frame – January 15-16, 1998 – has escaped serious scrutiny because the story is complicated, with overlapping sequences and a conflation of events. The three midnight meetings make for a good thriller, but confusion arises over which date each of those late night/early morning meetings actually occurred. Proper sequencing simplifies the complicated.

1/15/98 Moody acquires the Tripp tapes from Tripp's previous lawyer (Behre).

1/16/98 At 2 a.m., the elves (Coulter, Moody, Conway, Marcus and Porter) listen to the tapes in Coulter's apartment.

Moody gives one tape to the FBI in the morning and the remainder in the afternoon. (Where were those remaining tapes during the interval?)

---

4 David Daley, "Ann Coulter: lights all shining on her," *Hartford Courant*, 6/25/99.

5 Susan Schmidt and Michael Weisskopf, *Truth at Any Cost: Ken Starr and the Unmaking of Bill Clinton*, HarperCollins, 2000, pg. 34.

6 David Daley, "Ann Coulter: lights all shining on her," *Hartford Courant*, 6/25/99.

Tripp tricks Lewinsky into a meeting at the Ritz-Carlton, where the FBI interrogates Lewinsky from 12:30 p.m. to 12:23 a.m.

That evening, Moody and Conway meet Jones' attorney (Wesley Holmes) at Tripp's home. Moody does not have the tapes which Holmes wanted to hear.

1/17/98 At a midnight meeting, the FBI gives a copy of the first tape back to Moody (with Conway hiding in the foyer). Around 12:30 a.m., that tape is played at *Newsweek* (Moody, Conway, Isikoff, McDaniel, Klaidman, Thomas) are present.

Disinformation from Moody

In late January, the *Washington Post* published this interesting piece of disinformation from the elves:

> Moody is uncertain how Tripp learned about him, but he scoffs at the notion that he got the job because of ties to conservatives. His best guess is that while Tripp worked for the White House counsel's office during the Bush administration, she was impressed with his success in badgering officials to drop decades-old regulations in the citrus industry.[7]

Everything Moody told the *Washington Post* was a lie. He knew who recommended him to Tripp (Coulter) and who was involved (all the anti-Clinton elves). His cover story was clearly concocted to preserve the identity of the (conservative) conspirators.

Citrus industry-deregulation as a prerequisite for pressing a sexual harassment case against the POTUS? Is it merely coincidence that Coulter would later publish a column in *George* magazine attacking Isikoff with these words: "It's not like we secretly disliked Clinton because of his administration's position on California's citrus cartels or something, and then set to work on some crazy scheme to destroy him using a pathological intern as our Mata Hari."[8]

For the next six months, the elves operated in secrecy as Coulter wrote her book advocating the impeachment of President William Jefferson Clinton. During that time, she appeared on scores of TV shows to discuss the Clinton scandals and no one knew about her secret involvement with those scandals.

Coulter's First Book

In *High Crimes and Misdemeanors*,[9] released in August, Coulter has surprisingly little to say about the Tripp tapes. The two most significant passages follow:

> Jones's attorneys hadn't deposed either Lewinsky or Tripp on the eve of Clinton's deposition. That night, however, one of Jones's lawyers [Wesley Holmes] informally interviewed Tripp to fill in the details of the anonymous phone calls.
>
> [REALITY CHECK: Holmes wanted to *hear* the tapes, which Moody no longer possessed.]

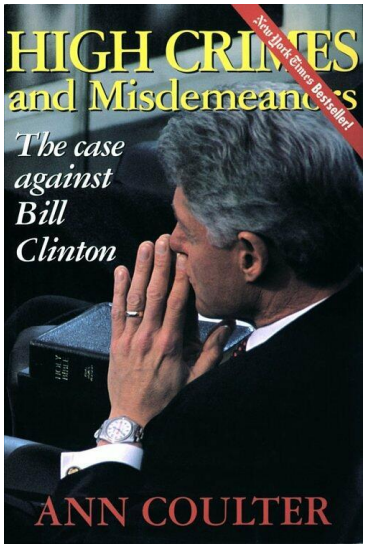
---

7 David Segal, "Dream Case Is a Burden, Lawyer Finds: No Pay, Long Hours For Tripp's Counsel," *Washington Post*, 1/26/98, pg. A09. See http://www.washingtonpost.com/wp-srv/politics/special/clinton/stories/moody012698.htm.

8 Ann Coulter, "Spikey and Me," *George*, May 1999.

9 Ann Coulter, *High Crimes and Misdemeanors: The Case Against Bill Clinton*, Regnery, 1998, pg. 31.

> Tripp had agreed to an informal meeting with Jones's attorneys in hopes of avoiding a formal deposition. She had only recently discovered that her home state of Maryland was one of the few states that prohibit people from taping their own phone conversations without telling the other people on the line; she had not told Lewinsky …
>
> [REALITY CHECK: The elves, including Coulter, facilitated that meeting. Coulter left out their involvement, and their conflict of interest.]



Interestingly, Coulter later bragged about "getting a best-seller out of" her involvement with the elves.

Coulter Outed

Meanwhile, hidden from public view, was Coulter's intimate knowledge of, and clandestine connection with, the now-infamous Tripp tapes. Ironically, it was the Starr Report which exposed her involvement: "[Tripp] said she subsequently learned that Moody, before turning the tapes over to Starr's office, had given them to Ann Coulter – a conservative lawyer and frequent talk show guest who has since written a book outlining the case for Clinton's impeachment – for copying."[10]

The Starr Report included Tripp's testimony which revealed that Coulter once had access to the tapes which ultimately led to Clinton's impeachment. For a few weeks, the question was "What did Coulter hear and when did she hear it?" In the Starr Report, Tripp testified:

Q: And your information was that he (Jim Moody) and a woman named Ann Coulter had copied the tapes, and that Ann Coulter had a complete set of tapes?

A: Well, I was told from a couple of different sources – asked, actually, was I aware that … he had Ann Coulter make high speed dubbings of each tape … but has since listened to all the tapes.

"Tripp later testified that they [Coulter and Moody] did so [make copies of the tapes] contrary to her instructions."[11] Only the five conspirators knew of the early morning rendezvous when they listened to Tripp's tapes in Coulter's apartment. How, then, did Tripp hear rumors of that event? After all, the elves were almost pathological in keeping their activities and identities secret. So, who told what, when, and why?

Perhaps Coulter could not contain herself over what she described as the "greatest night" of her life. She was, you will recall, the elf who gave the elves their name in her hint to Isikoff in 1997. The baby princess had to prove her worth despite the need for secrecy.

The media's suspicions were initially aroused when, in a *Crossfire* debate, [12] Coulter refused to give a direct answer on this topic: "A real quick question on the tapes. Have you ever personally listened to the Linda Tripp tapes? … How'd you get them?" Caught off guard, Coulter gave a Clintonesque evasion. When she was first publicly questioned about her connection with the Tripp tapes, Coulter was *speechless*! Then she asked a *delaying* question: "Which tapes?" Then she gave a *non*-responsive

---

10 John Riley, "Starr Aide's Role As Tripp Advisor," *Newsday*, 10/3/98.

11 Joe Conason and Gene Lyons, *The Hunting of the President: The Ten-Year Campaign to Destroy Bill and Hillary Clinton*, St. Martin's Griffin, 2000, pg. 351.

12 Ann Coulter, *Crossfire*, CNN, 10/2/98.

Clintonesque admission: "Well, do you think it's OK for a president to perjury himself under oath? So what do you think of a political pundit lying on TV?"

Why such obfuscation if there's nothing to *hide*? Was Coulter concerned about the *legal* ramifications of her actions? Why not speak the truth? Even the *Washington Post* reported that event: "On a recent edition of 'Crossfire,' Coulter was briefly speechless when asked if she had heard any of Tripp's tapes before the story became public. She now admits she heard one of the tapes, saying that an unidentified friend needed her recording equipment to copy it."[13]

Three days later, towards the end of her book tour for *High Crimes and Misdemeanors*, Coulter gave a speech in which she tried to dismiss her own involvement with the tapes which led to the subject of her book:

> In this document dump on Friday I made my debut in Volume III in which I was accused in Linda Tripp's testimony of making copies of all of her tapes. She had heard rumors that I made copies of all 17 tapes back in January, which I can assure you if it had been true they would have been – all over the world – air-dropped by January 22nd. And apparently that's what Ken Starr's prosecutors thought because I never heard from them. But, you know, suppose I were asked, "Did you make copies of these tapes?" Well, I suppose, you know, I could just say "No," then later say, "Well, when you said tape I mean a track tape and listen, really what, what does it really mean to listen? Listening is one of the great mysteries of life.[14]

Evasion, wrapped in humor and blanketed by rationalizations. If the President of the United States can debate the definition of the word "is," surely Coulter can play the same semantic game. After all, she's one of the "good guys."

Denials and Smokescreens

On *Rivera Live*,[15] Coulter first *denied* hearing the Tripp tapes, then *admitted* to hearing *one* tape, and lied about her *source* for the tapes.

RIVERA: "Did you ever listen to and/or make copies of those tapes?"

COULTER: "No, I literally would have had them air-dropped across America and I'd probably be a millionaire by now. … they would have been on *Entertainment Tonight*, they would have been on your show and I'd be a multi-millionaire."

Interestingly, just hours before I had interviewed Moody about whether Coulter had copied the tapes. His reply was *almost identical* – "If she had them, believe me, she would have been the *first* to release them *wholesale*. I mean, she's doing a *book* on the Clinton scandals."[16] – the *very same argument* used by Coulter on *Rivera Live* later that night.

Directly challenged by Rivera, Coulter conceded listening to *one* of the tapes: "I heard the same tape that was described by *Newsweek*."

---

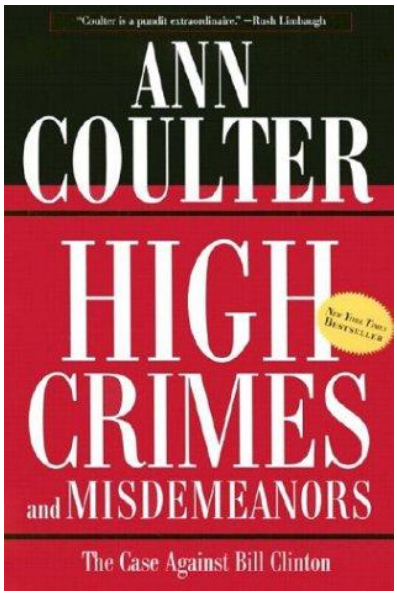
13 Howard Kurtz, "The Blonde Flinging Bombshells at Bill Clinton," *Washington Post*, 10/16/98. http://www.washingtonpost.com/wp-srv/politics/special/clinton/stories/coulter101698.htm.

14 Ann Coulter, speech at Monday Club, Washington, D.C., 10/5/98.

15 *Rivera Live*, CNBC, 10/14/98.

16 Author interview.

But Coulter adamantly denied getting the tape from Moody: "I got *nothing* out of him [Moody] and I must say *being* one of his friends that *did* annoy me." Is it *coincidental* that Moody also spoke of Coulter's *annoyance* at him over the tapes? Moody told me, "She's kind of annoyed at me for not giving her the tapes so she could put them in her book."[17]



Still, Coulter continued to blow smokescreens, claiming she got the tapes in her capacity as a journalist/investigative reporter ("people send me things"). In fact, she got the tapes because of her friendship with Moody.

In discussing the tapes, Rivera said, "You got a bestseller out of it." Coulter boasted: "Yes, I did."[18] Coulter herself noted the exquisite timing of *High Crimes* – "Yeah, it was good timing"[19] – and, tongue-in-cheek, admitted "I thought impeachment might be in the news this year."[20] How and why did she think so? And did Coulter orchestrate to some degree the events which thrust her into the limelight and her book to the top of the best-seller list?

What is the truth behind the Tripp tapes and what exactly was Coulter's role? To what extent has Coulter manipulated the media and the judicial system for her own personal gain? And to what degree has Coulter changed history for the benefit of her own career?

Coulter admitted she "had" (indicating active *possession* and not passive *audience*) "them" (i.e., more than one). Furthermore, Coulter and Moody BOTH admit that she *asked* him for the tapes. They BOTH said she didn't *get* the tapes. They BOTH said she was "*annoyed*" at his refusal. They BOTH said that if she *had* gotten the tapes she would have published them and made a fortune. They BOTH *lied. Repeatedly*.

Link Between Tripp and Jones

Two days later a *Washington Post* profile of Coulter exposed her secret connection with both Jones and Tripp.

> She referred Linda Tripp to her attorney friend Jim Moody (Coulter and Moody are both Deadheads who followed the Grateful Dead to dozens of far-flung concerts, she says). Coulter says she suggested to Moody that Tripp take her tapes of Monica Lewinsky to independent counsel Kenneth Starr; he had already thought of the idea.[21]
>
> She advised Paula Jones's lawyers in their suit against Clinton and helped Jones find new attorneys when the first pair quit.[22]
>
> "I was a little concerned about the 'right-wing cabal' appearance of things," Coulter says. Although Starr is examining whether Tripp lied about how the tapes were made, Coulter says she's not worried about being questioned.[23]

---

17 Howard Kurtz, "The Blonde Flinging Bombshells at Bill Clinton," *Washington Post*, 10/16/98, pg. D4.
18 *Rivera Live*, 11/16/98.
19 Ann Coulter, *Equal Time*, 8/19/98.
20 Ann Coulter, *Drudge Report*, 8/8/98.
21 Howard Kurtz, "The Blonde Flinging Bombshells at Bill Clinton," *Washington Post*, 10/16/98. http://www.washingtonpost.com/wp-srv/politics/special/clinton/stories/coulter101698.htm.
22 *Ibid*.

> Both Coulter and Moody say he was not the source of the tape she heard. "She's kind of annoyed at me for not giving her the tapes so she could put them in her book," Moody says. Still, he says, "I always enjoy her because she doesn't pull her punches. We all want to appear dignified and thoughtful and contemplative, and Ann is just Ann."[24]

From the beginning, the elves secretly and zealously conspired to topple the Clinton presidency. They also desperately sought to keep their involvement secret. When their involvement came to light, they stonewalled – refusing to cooperate with legitimate investigations into their actions.

Flip-Flop on Tapes

Once Tripp's tapes had served their purpose – furthering the cause of impeachment – Coulter downplayed their importance. Months earlier Coulter was a one-woman ad campaign *promoting* their significance.

> 23 hours of tapes. On C-Span, over and over and over again. … and there are 23 hours of tapes. … It's not Clinton vs. Starr. It's not even Clinton vs. Congress. It's C-Span playing all of the evidence that Ken Starr has, including, at a minimum, 23 hours of tapes of Monica Lewinsky weeping and crying – on the phone. … But moreover, the important point is – Look! The most important point of what you just said was that Monica denies it. Well, no, actually, she's on tape admitting to it when she doesn't know she's being taped. She has said nothing since then … But she's on tape. This is why tapes are such amazing evidence.[25]

Pressure became so intense that Coulter became desperate <u>not</u> to talk about the Tripp tapes. Again, on *Rivera Live*, Coulter said:

> [Asked about her source for the tapes] I will stipulate to the fact that I'm a drug-dealing serial *killer* so that we can talk about something other than *me* [laughingly]. … [asked about testifying before OIC] Let's assume I'm the devil incarnate [laughingly]. … I don't want to talk about the *tapes*. I want to talk about *Clinton*."[26]

Why the *flip-flop*?

The day after her *Crossfire* debate *Newsday* reported that some of those tapes had been tampered with. "Tripp also indicated that Moody may have an explanation for the mystery surrounding her tapes – which, according to FBI forensic tests, have in some cases been duplicated or tampered with."[27] Apparently nine of 27 Tripp tapes "were copied from the originals" and "one tape may have been tampered with,"[28] sparking controversy over their *credibility*. One example of a corrupted critical passage is this one concerning Lewinsky's fear for her life:

LEWINSKY: "I know [tape skip] [inaudible] my mom will kill me if I don't tell him – make it clear at some point that I'm not going to hurt him, because – see, my mom's big fear is that he's going to send somebody out to kill me."

---

23 *Ibid*.
24 *Ibid*.
25 Ann Coulter, *Rivera Live*, CNBC, 3/4/98.
26 Ann Coulter, *Rivera Live*, CNBC, 10/23/98.
27 John Riley, "Starr Aide's Role As Tripp Advisor," *Newsday*, 10/3/98.
28 Carl Limbacher, "Tripp Tape 'Doctored' where Monica Speaks of Death Fears," *Newsmax.com*, 10/6/98.

The previous portion of the tape shows Tripp encouraging Lewinsky to *hang up* on the president, not *talk* to him:

TRIPP: "Well, let me put it to you this way. By hanging up and saying you're telling your parents, and then hanging up the phone, you're saying a whole hell of a lot more than you could ever do in a 20-minute conversation."

Who tampered with the tapes? Was exculpatory evidence *erased*? Was damaging evidence *fabricated*? Who stood to *profit*?

Prior to this revelation, Coulter lied about *hearing* the Tripp tapes: "I was just thinking last night one thing we still have to hear are the tapes. The two most famous women in America, Monica Lewinsky and Linda Tripp and no one has ever heard their voices."[29] Of course, Coulter *had* heard those voices.

Suspiciously, Coulter and Moody told almost the *exact same story*. Their cover story: absence of widespread dissemination and personal profit. Coincidental? Coulter lied about *hearing* the Tripp tapes, about *having* the Tripp tapes, and about her *source* for the Tripp tapes.[30]

Still, few people grasped the import of Coulter's *possession* of those tapes.

House Judiciary Investigations

Still, it was yet another several weeks before Congress took the elves connection seriously. While Starr's office showed absolutely no interest in Coulter, the House Judiciary Committee requested information from Coulter,[31] to which she responded with her characteristic arrogance.[32] Coulter even used the media to forestall their investigation. (This would become standard procedure for Coulter when confronted with potential legal jeopardy.)

Ms. Coulter's response:[33]

The Honorable John Conyers Jr.
Ranking Minority Member
Committee on the Judiciary
2138 Rayburn House Office Building
Washington, DC 20515-6216
By regular mail to the Honorable John Conyers
By email to the Honorable John Conyers & David Schippers, Esq.

November 18, 1998

Dear Mr. Conyers:

---

29 Ann Coulter, *Inside Politics*, CNN, 5/6/98.
30 Howard Kurtz, "The Blonde Flinging Bombshells at Bill Clinton," *Washington Post*, 10/16/98, pg. D4.
31 Letter from Rep. John Conyers to Ann Coulter, 11/16/98.
32 Letter from Ann Coulter to Rep. John Conyers, 11/18/98.
33 Conyers-Coulter correspondence. See http://www.conservativenews.org/indepth/archive/199811/IND19981119k.html.

> Thank you for your correspondence. I wish you the best success in your impeachment inquiry. Please correct me if I'm wrong, but my understanding is that your committee is looking into impeachment of the president. I do not believe you have authority to impeach a private citizen for expressing her first amendment rights by writing a book critical of the president. For that reason, I have no intention of complying with your burdensome, irrelevant, and harassing request that I produce, inter alia, phone records, emails and birthday cards exchanged with several of my friends and acquaintances since 1994. If it's any help, however, I believe that you should be able to obtain the same information from Terry Lenzner or another of the president's private investigators.
>
> Best wishes for your future success.
>
> Sincerely,
>
> Ann Coulter

Let's examine a few of the evasive tactics used by Coulter in her non-response to the House Judiciary Committee's legitimate request for information.

- Coulter evaded the *point* of the request – for *substantive pertinent* information germane to the case.
- Coulter challenged the *authority* of the Committee but did not *deny* the possession of information.
- Coulter treated the request itself as absurd and used hyperbolic exaggeration to ridicule it.
- Coulter ended with a characteristic acerbic put-down.

Coulter answered the Judiciary Committee's legitimate request for information with sarcasm, treating the request itself as *absurd*, but did not *deny* having *possession* of pertinent material the Judiciary Committee was seeking. Instead, she questioned their *authority* and implied their *request* was absurd.

COULTER: "I do not believe you have authority to impeach a private citizen"

Lawyer and linguist Coulter knows the committee was not seeking *her* impeachment and such a claim *skews* the *intent* of the request. Repeatedly, Coulter muddied the waters by suggesting "impeachment" on various shows with a variety of guests who disagreed with her views.

COULTER: "for expressing her First Amendment rights by writing a book critical of the president."

Coulter's Tripp tape connection (*not* her book) was the salient raison d'être for the committee's request. Furthermore, Coulter's First Amendment rights were abridged in no way, shape, or form. The question was whether Coulter had in her *possession* pertinent *evidence* pursuant to Conyers' request. Coulter neither confirmed nor denied such possession! (An inventive way to take the Fifth!)

COULTER: "your burdensome, irrelevant and harassing request"

Coulter once said that the purpose of a grand jury (and, by extension, a House investigation) is "to ferret out the truth."[34] Whether this process is "burdensome" depends on the *extent* and manner of Coulter's relationships to those under investigation and the volume of evidence she might possess.

---

[34] Ann Coulter, *Rivera Live*, CNBC, 2/13/98.

Conyers' request certainly *was* "relevant" in that Coulter had possession of the Tripp tapes *prior* to Ken Starr. This *fact* alone raises questions of propriety, legitimacy and ethicality regarding not Conyers' but *Coulter's* conduct.

Conyers' request cannot be considered "harassing" because the triggering mechanism was not Coulter's "book critical of the president" but rather Coulter's silence, evasion and lies concerning Coulter's connection to the Tripp tapes. Why obfuscate if there's nothing to hide? (When you have no defense go on the attack!)

COULTER: "that I produce, inter alia, phone records, e-mails and birthday cards"

Another intentional *skewing* of the request which only sought substantive information germane to the issue before the Committee. The *intent* of the request was *not* to peep into Coulter's *private* life. The *intent* of the request was to ascertain what *evidence* was *possessed* by Coulter.

Conyers' formal request to Coulter and the other elves was even more pertinent than he suspected. The elves were the crucial link between Jones and Tripp. The elves ensured the Jones case would not be settled. And the elves had literal possession of the Tripp tapes prior to the OIC.

Coulter Stonewalls

Coulter again appeared on *Rivera Live*, this time to discuss Conyers' request.[35] In response to Rivera's query of why she refused to cooperate with the House Judiciary Committee, saying, "Because I think Conyers is being a federally-paid birth card policeman." She added, "I am not producing random birth, birthday cards I happened to have sent to my friends four years ago."

Coulter hyperventilated, saying, "This [Conyers request] is absolutely *outrageous Bolshevik* harassment." Geraldo again asked *when* Conyers requested birthday cards, reading from Conyers' request. Coulter replied: "How would you like to produce your correspondence for the last four years with four of your friends randomly?"

Geraldo was not under investigation. Coulter's four friends – part of the tightly-knit cabal she now admits being part of – were! Randomly? The named individuals in Conyers' request were under investigation. The selection was neither arbitrary nor random but was based upon investigatory requirements. The Committee targeted specific individuals – like Ann Coulter – who might have pertinent information germane to their investigation.

This is not rocket science. This is standard practice in accordance with recognized investigative and judicial procedures. Coulter's evasions, evocations of unfairness, and unsubstantiated claims of harassment derailed (temporarily) investigation into *what* Coulter knew and *when* she knew it.

Most intriguingly, at no time did Coulter *deny* possession of the *legitimate* information requested by Rep. Conyers' inquiry. Rather, knowing the best *defense* (especially when you don't have one) is a good

[35] Ann Coulter, *Rivera Live*, CNBC, 11/19/98.

offense, Coulter went on the *attack* – attempting (successfully and temporarily) to deflect investigation into *her* activities.

Later that same night, Coulter reiterated her nonsensical defense, this time on the *700 Club*.[36]

It Had Done Its Job

To recap, as a clandestine attorney for Paula Jones, Coulter 1) (pre-Lewinsky) *sabotaged* her own client's quest for an out-of-court settlement in order to "get the president," 2) (post-impeachment) *took credit for* vindicating Jones' reputation and *commiserated with* Jones for having "to face those sorts of attacks *I* wouldn't have wanted to" even though she had forced Jones into that position, and, 3) (post-*Penthouse*) *condemned* Jones as "trailer-park trash."


The Washington Post

Clinton Impeached

House Approves Articles Charging Perjury, Obstruction

Livingston Quits As Designated House Speaker

Mostly Partisan Vote Shifts Drama to Senate

Clinton Vows to Finish Out Term

President Says He Will Keep Working to 'the Last Hour of the Last Day'

Coulter regularly rails against abuses by the rich and powerful against the weak and voiceless. As it turns out, her condemnation of Jones should have been self-directed: "I totally believed she was the good Christian girl she made herself out to be. … now it turns out she's a fraud – at least to the extent of pretending to be an honorable and moral person."[37]

Moreover, Coulter lied about *hearing* the Tripp tapes ("I was just thinking last night one thing we still have to hear are the tapes. The two most famous women in America, Monica Lewinsky and Linda Tripp and no one has ever heard their voices.").[38] On *Rivera Live*, she first denied listening to *any* of the tapes, then admitted hearing only *one*, but denied *having* the Tripp tapes ("Geraldo, if I had copies of those tapes you would have gotten a FEDEX package the next day."),[39] yet denied her *source* for the Tripp tapes ("Both Coulter and Moody say he was not the source of the tape she heard.").[40] None of which was true.

However, once the threat of Congressional investigation into her activities was over, Coulter revealed that the greatest night of her life ("I must say, I don't mind reliving the greatest night of my life over and over again. I was dancing a jig. I was bouncing off the walls") was when she listened to the tapes Moody had provided her.[41]

Coulter even boasted, "I do think [Linda Tripp is] a great American hero. We never would have found out about the corruption and illegality at the very top of the government but for Linda Tripp. If you imagine what the world would be like if Linda Tripp hadn't kept those tapes – a very different world."[42]

Isn't it time we examined more closely Coulter's clandestine connection to the Tripp tapes – those tapes which changed history?

Isikoff concluded, "The conspiracy, though right wing, may not have been vast. But it had done its job."[43]

---

36 Ann Coulter, *700 Club*, Family Channel, 11/19/98.
37 Ann Coulter, "Clinton sure can pick 'em," 10/30/00.
38 Ann Coulter, *Inside Politics*, CNN, 5/6/98.
39 Ann Coulter, *Rivera Live*, CNBC, 10/14/98.
40 Howard Kurtz, "The Blonde Flinging Bombshells at Bill Clinton," *Washington Post*, 10/16/98, pg. D4.
41 David Daley, "Ann Coulter: lights all shining on her," *Hartford Courant*, 6/25/99.
42 Ann Coulter, *Rivera Live*, CNBC, 5/24/00.
43 Anthony Marro, "Active Reporter of Passive Conspirator?" *Columbia Journalism Review*, May/June 1999.

Case Study # 3

Coulter for Congress: Only Scoundrels Need Apply

"I'd burn down my neighbor's house." – *Ann Coulter*[1]

[Our third case study highlights Coulter's exaltation of self and contempt for others. Her enmity for Congressman Chris Shays (R-CT), whom she called a "pantywaist" due to his anti-impeachment vote, compelled Coulter to try to run for Congress for the express purpose of unseating him. A viable Republican candidate refused to exit the race, and the Libertarian Party refused to run a non-Libertarian candidate – one who would not endorse the Libertarian candidate for President – so Coulter acquiesced by attacking the Libertarians for standing up for their principles! Despite her professed love for liberty and limited government, Coulter professed an undying hatred for the Libertarian Party which shares those ideals. In her attack, she admitted hers was intended to be a "total sham" campaign.]

Total Sham Campaign

Piqued at Rep. Shay's anti-impeachment vote – and at the Libertarian Party's rejection of her as its candidate – Coulter attacked with a vengeance, expressing her contempt for others and her vindictive nature.

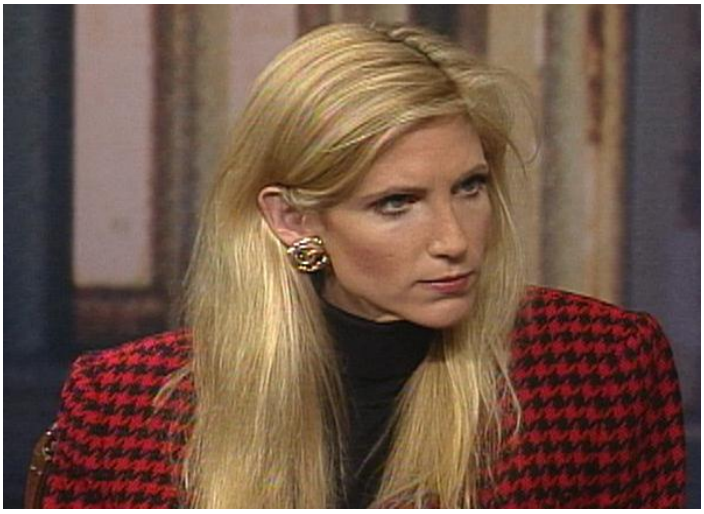
Remember, Coulter *boasted* of releasing confidential (attorney-client privileged) information to the press for the express purpose of subverting that client's interests.[2] Coulter *boasted* of lying to her publisher[3] and has developed a *habit* of lying. Now Coulter *boasted* of trying to throw a congressional race by running a totally sham campaign with another party.[4]

> I did everything I could, and it's not my fault. As a legal resident of the noble Fourth District of Connecticut …
>
> I didn't run in the primary against Shays because, as a writer, I'd have to give up my livelihood to do so. If I were a dentist, I could continue to remove molars while campaigning against Shays; as a writer, I'd have to abandon my career the moment I announce. I'll give up a month or two for a grudge match, but not six, seven or eight. …

---

1 Ann Coulter, "I'd burn down my neighbor's house," 9/25/00, http://townhall.com/columnists/anncoulter/2000/09/25/id_burn_down_my_neighbors_house.
2 David Daley, "Ann Coulter: lights all shining on her," *Hartford Courant*, 6/25/99.
3 Ann Coulter, Free Republic Rally, 10/31/98.
4 Ann Coulter, "I'd burn down my neighbor's house," 9/25/00, http://townhall.com/columnists/anncoulter/2000/09/25/id_burn_down_my_neighbors_house.

> Though I wasn't willing to sacrifice my profession (and life) for the absolute minimum six months it would have required to run in a primary, I was willing to forsake my profession (and life) for about six weeks simply to achieve the greater glory of causing Shays to lose. My idea was that I'd run a total sham, media-intensive, third-party Jesse Ventura campaign for one month before the election, and hope for enough votes to cause the (official) Democrat to win.



We can glean much about the real Ann Coulter from this essay (more extracts to follow). As a Chinese proverb states, "If you wish to know the mind of a man, listen to his words." Coulter's mind and heart are extraordinarily exposed in this essay.

First, Coulter's *only* concern was to deny Shays his reelection. She didn't care who would be elected, just as long as Shays was defeated. She didn't care who the people of the "noble Fourth District of Connecticut" wanted or deserved, just as long as Shays was defeated. She didn't care *how* she achieved her goal, just as long as Shays was defeated.

Second, she was willing to sacrifice – but only a little. Just a few weeks. Totally uncommitted to actually serving the "noble Fourth District of Connecticut" either in a legitimate campaign for Congress or as an elected representative of Connecticut.

Coulter's House-burning Fantasy

Consider now the next-to-last paragraph of Coulter's essay:

> There's a joke about a Frenchman, an Englishman and a Russian who are told they have only one day until the end of the world. The Frenchman says he will spend his last day with a bottle of Bordeaux and a beautiful woman. The Englishman says he will take his favorite sheepdog for a walk across the moors. The Russian says he will burn down his neighbor's house. I'm with the Russian.

Here we see deep inside Coulter's heart. On the eve of total annihilation – the end of the world – the woman who has fantasized about being the "czar of the universe" wants her last act in life and in human history to be one of destruction and vengeance.

Burn down his house!?!?!?

View From Inside the Libertarian Party

Daniel Gislao, the Libertarian Party's candidate for Coulter's District, issued a press release on Coulter's attempted coup:[5]

> Greetings,
>
> My name is Daniel Gislao and I am the Libertarian candidate for Congress in Connecticut's 4th District. Ann conveniently forgot to mention that when she requested to be put on the ballot, we already had a candidate: ME!
>
> I would have been happy to step aside and allow her to run on the Libertarian line, if she were a Libertarian. Contrary to what she claims (or wants to believe) she is not. In short, she was looking for easy ballot access so that she could have a platform from which to attack the incumbent, Christopher Shays, for voting against impeaching President Clinton. She found a 3rd party on the ballot, and figured she could weasel her way in. It didn't work. Now she is playing the proverbial "scorned woman." And as Alan notes, it does not play well.
>
> Lest anyone believe ending to the War on Some Drugs is my only issue, feel free to visit my website at www.electdan.org or email my campaign email address at dang2000@mindspring.com. Questions and intelligent discussion are welcome.

I later interviewed Gislao, the Libertarian Party's candidate for "the noble Fourth District of Connecticut," who offered additional background on Coulter's aborted run for office.[6]

> Coulter did not have the blessing of the national party. Steve Dasbach, our National Director, showed up at our only meeting in Cromwell, CT, and left the decision up to us. He gave no "blessing" either way.
>
> Her "people," specifically Mark Smith of the Federalist Society, contacted State Chairperson Carl Vassar, and then State Communications Director James Madison (yes, his real name) before getting in touch with Tom Ross, a former State Chairperson, who contacted me. After speaking with Tom and Mark several times, I told them if Ann wanted my place on the ballot, she needed to call me personally. Finally, she did. (I don't bite. And I spent nearly ten years working for the U.S Postal Service. If I didn't kill anyone there, she should have nothing to worry about!)
>
> Every other sentence was about Shays' impeachment vote. Hey, I agree with her, but as far as I am concerned it is over with already, and not a major part of my campaign. She is such a bitter and vengeful person that she refuses to let it go. She probably feels that torpedoing Shays would be doing a service to the Republican Party, as she feels his vote was a betrayal. There was no negotiation. The deal was simple: Show me that you are a Libertarian, and you are in and have my full support. She failed to do so. What is interesting is that we went back and read every one of her columns we could find. She never mentioned the Party in a positive light. Not once.

---

5 Daniel Gislao, press release, 10/14/00.

6 Author interview, 10/16/00.

As important as her opposition to ending the War on Some Drugs was her refusal to openly support our Presidential candidate, Harry Browne. She wavered and said she would think about it. She clearly subscribed to the "wasted vote" theory and didn't want to take any position that may benefit Gore. As far as I am concerned, if you are running for office as a Libertarian, and anyone asks you for whom you are going to vote, you answer "Harry Browne!" before the question is even finished. It is that simple.

When it came to the War on Some Drugs, we gave her options. Oppose the suspension of our 4th and 5th Amendment rights. Oppose sending taxpayer money to South America to poison their farmlands. Oppose racial profiling. Oppose denying cancer and AIDS patients medical marijuana. She would do none of the above. She would either roll her eyes and ignore the question, or rant about how people who use drugs go on welfare. I won't go into how ludicrous her arguments are, I am sure you can figure this out on your own.

Her position was that as a person who make a living in the media, she would have to give up her career while running for public office. This is why she waited so long to express an interest in running. Of course, to be able to put "Congressional Candidate" on her resume would have ultimately made up for any time or money sacrificed by not writing or making appearances. She could have easily approached us earlier in the year and made her intentions clear. I have to work for a living. I would love to be able to quit my job and devote full time to campaigning, and I would never be so selfish as to not step aside for a Libertarian who was able to do. But contrary to what Ann thinks, she is not a Libertarian and is not the right person to carry the Party's message. And the more she rants about how she was turned down, the better we feel about our decision.

Coulter's Fans Speak Out

A groundswell of grassroots condemnation arose to Coulter's attempt to *subvert the election process* and her subsequent column attacking a Libertarian Party issue out of sheer spite.

- "As a Connecticut Libertarian, I can absolutely attest that Ann is not being truthful when she says that ending the insane war on drugs is our only issue. … But do me a favor: try to lie a little less about my positions. Being angry at rejection is no justification for deliberate distortion. Did you really expect us to abandon our principles just to get you as a candidate?"[7]
- "Ann Coulter just becomes more bizarre all the time. … In her polemic, she states that the [drug legalization] issue is the LP's only issue. Then she contradicts herself, saying she agrees with the LP on almost everything except drug legalization. Then she ends with the nasty little take on her joke about the

[7] Posted by dangfitz, Townhall Forum, 9/25/00..

Frenchman, Englishman, and Russian. She would rather burn down her neighbor's house. Indeed. Venom for venom's sake. If Ann stays on this path, she is not worthy of serious consideration."[8]

- "Furthermore, she admittedly did not approach the Libertarian Party as a sincere candidate, but rather as a ruse to damage Shays."[9]
- "Her pose of being all *offended* that they wouldn't let her use them as a vehicle for her private vendetta has turned her into a joke (a blond joke, to be exact)." [10]
- "Let me see if I got this straight, ok? She NEVER intended to really win, she just wanted to USE the Libertarian Party to further her own personal goals. She then gets pissed because they won't change their views and accept hers, so she's gonna show them by using propaganda to spike the aims of that party? Is this about it? WOW! What a charmer!"[11]
- "How many of you who support her running as an independent solely to oust the incumbent Republican (purposefully electing a dreaded Democrat), see any inconsistency in your position? Does this not contrast just a bit with your constant refrain to Buchanan and his supporters that he 'can't win' and will 'just elect the Democrat?'"[12]
- "She openly stated in her column that her intent was not to represent the Libertarian Party or its philosophy nor was her intent to win. Her purpose was only to enter the race to draw enough Republican votes to cause the Democratic Party candidate to defeat Shays. … I don't find it surprising that Libertarians would feel 'used' by such a strategy."[13]
- "Hey anyway the joke tells of perspectives in grudge keeping one could marvel at. Cut throat generations under iron rule for so long awaiting access to enemies unfettered by law as being the point of life is an eye-opener for me. … but here the idea of personal obliteration must supersede universal obliteration, even if only by hours …"[14]
- "the first thing that occurred to me reading AC's latest was that I've known women with sharp tongues but hers is a meat cleaver! If I ever get on her sh*t list, I only hope she gives me a chance to apologize."[15]
- "Ann has to know she is blowing smoke. The big question is why? Is she really so shallow that it's ego-driven?"[16]
- "You wrote a column condemning legalization [of marijuana], not because you believe it, but because the Conn LP dissed you. In your own words, you just wanted to burn down your neighbor's house. What a shame. I've lost all respect for you."[17]
- "Her conservative credentials are suspect, but unquestionably a friend of liberty Coulter is not."[18]
- "But conservatives like Ann are only concerned about their pocketbooks, not with principles."[19]

---

8 Email from anyo@aol.com to Coulter@egroups.com, 9/26/00.
9 Post # 56, Free Republic Forum, 9/24/00.
10 Post # 92, Free Republic Forum, 9/24/00.
11 Post # 108, Free Republic Forum, 9/24/00.
12 Post # 183, Free Republic Forum, 9/26/00.
13 Post # 33, Free Republic Forum, 9/27/00.
14 Posted by Will 2, Townhall Forum, 9/27/00.
15 Post # 1344, Ann Coulter Fan Club Forum, 9/27/00.
16 Post # 15, Free Republic Forum, 9/29/00.
17 Post # 1418, Ann Coulter Fan Club Forum, 9/30/00.
18 Post # 21, Free Republic Forum, 9/29/00.
19 Post # 22, Free Republic Forum, 9/29/00.

- "You are right, Coulter is an idiot. Worse, she is a hypocrite."[20]
- "She's just miffed that the LP refused to compromise on their principles and bow to her popularity. It's that old High School Cheerleader mentality."[21]
- "She is nothing but a talking head, using the mystique of television to convince people she is an expert on anything. She is also a smoker in denial. I hope she gets a rude awakening."[22]

Coulter's Colleagues Ignore Her

After Coulter revealed her efforts to thwart the election process, the Libertarian Party of Connecticut issued a formal statement.[23] Significantly, *no one else of any prominence* condemned Coulter's intended "total sham" campaign. No *elites* – in politics, media or elsewhere – condemned her conduct. The only condemnation, as noted above, came from the *grassroots* level.

How corrupt has this political system become to so easily acquiesce to such a blatant attempt at political subversion which far surpasses the worst that either the Bush or Gore presidential campaigns attempted.

Who will speak up for and exercise honesty and integrity? Not Ann Coulter and apparently not her peers.

An interesting exchange in the movie, *The Patriot*, provides a fitting capstone to this section. A British officer ordered that the church, with all the town's inhabitants locked inside, be burned. His subordinate said, "There's no honor in this." *Exactly*! No honor whatsoever.

But the British officer disagreed, saying, "The honor is found in the end, not the means. This will be forgotten." For this officer, for Marxists, and for Coulter, the end justifies the means. Victory and victory alone brings honor. But I ask you, *where* is the *honor* in Coulter's conduct?

Important truths are also presented in the 1964 movie adaptation of Gore Vidal's novel, *The Best Man*, which concerns the selection of the party's presidential candidate. Two memorable scenes are apropos at this juncture. In the first, the protagonist refuses to compromise on his principles, admonishing the others, "And so, one by one, these compromises, these small corruptions, destroy character." The film's climax comes when the protagonist foils his rival's presidential aspirations in a noble fashion. The moral insensibilities of the antagonist, evident throughout the movie, are crystallized when the defeated politician who was corrupt said, "I don't understand you" and the victorious and principled winner replied, "I know you don't. Because you have no sense of *responsibility* toward anybody or anything. And that is a *tragedy* in a man and it is a *disaster* in a president."

---

20 Post # 32, Free Republic Forum, 9/29/00.
21 Post # 164, Free Republic Forum, 9/29/00.
22 Post # 80, Free Republic Forum, 9/29/00.
23 Libertarian Party News, November 2000, originally accessed at www.lp.org.

Coulter has – one by one – entertained small corruptions which have corrupted her character, and her irresponsibility towards anybody or anything is discernible to all who have open eyes. Coulter proudly protests that "I don't do any duty conservatism."[24] (And I'm quite sure she doesn't do windows either.) Duty conservatism. Duty, honor, country. These sentiments are beyond Coulter's ken – a tragedy for her and a disaster for her constituents.

During the 2000 presidential election recount, Coulter's chutzpah was boundless when she exclaimed:

> It's Democrats who are willing to go on TV and lie and flack. You cannot imagine the shoe being on the other foot. You cannot imagine someone like me going on defending George Bush after having lost and he was trying to steal the election. You cannot imagine people like me or Republicans bringing lawsuits like this. And until the Democratic Party develops some sense of shame and honor, I really just want to get past this whole part of our nation's history.[25]

I *can* and *do* so imagine. Shame and honor? Coulter?

Can't imagine? Coulter would be *first* in line!

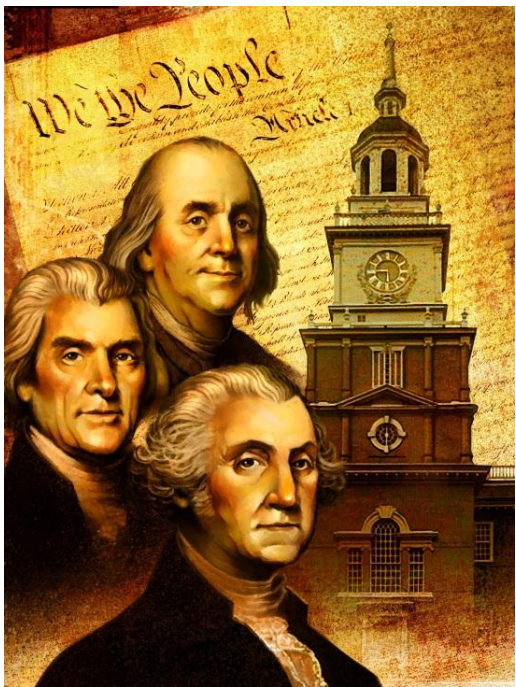
Talking (not Walking) the Talk

Just a couple of years earlier, Coulter had *courageously* expressed historically-accurate and biblically-correct views on moral and spiritual matters. Consider these remarks:

> It was really an incredibly novel *concept* this idea that our *Creator* endowed us with inalienable *rights*. *That's* what mutual respect comes from. That's what, you know, so much of our *common*, what we *assume* to be this *common* character *attribute comes* from. And to just have it *disembodied* from a *belief* in a higher being, I mean, why *should* a kid behave? Yes, it's good for a society for people to behave honestly and fairly, but it's not necessarily good for that *kid*. Why shouldn't he say "I want to be king, you're my slave?" … That's the whole argument for there not being a *king*, because no one's *born* with more *rights* than someone else. We all have these inalienable rights that *come* from the Creator.[26]

Coulter *accurately* presented the Founding Fathers original intent and perspective that:

1. our *rights* come from God
2. our *identity* rests in Him
3. we are *equal* before God
4. human laws are *derived* from God's laws concerning right human behavior
5. society functions *best* under just laws justly enforced



[24] Annys Shin, "Blonde Ambition on the Right," *National Journal*, 5/31/97.
[25] Ann Coulter, *Fox and Friends*, FNC, 11/23/00.
[26] Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 2/2/97.

However, Coulter apparently fails to see that adherence to the law is *good* – not just for *society*, but for the law-abiding *individual*. Perhaps as a consequence of this moral myopia, Coulter fails to embrace and embody those laws in her own life.

In a rather remarkable way, while upholding the *equality* of all, Coulter's elitist and hypocritical attitudes become transparent. Coulter fails to practice what she preaches, considering *herself* and her fellow compatriots *above* the law. Of course, it all depends *which* side of the aisle you are on. *Some* elites are above the law.

Coulter had declared that her candidacy would "bring a little integrity and principle"[27] into the political arena and later bombastically claimed that no one could "imagine someone like me [Coulter] going on defending George Bush"[28] yet, Coulter did just that prior to the 2000 election. Here are but two examples:

- I think you can forgive someone for almost *anything*. People do *bad* things. People do a lot of bad things. And I don't think I want to hear about every bad thing every presidential candidate has done. ... In a way, I mean, it's sort of *charming* that, that he's [George W.] *embarrassed* about it [former drug use]. It seems to me it would be different if, um, well for one thing if he were *still* doing cocaine … Everybody does bad things and *I* certainly don't want to be bored to death hearing about every *bad* thing every presidential candidate has ever done.[29]
- Unless it bears on the character and judgment of the candidate himself – right now – it is corrupting for the public to be told every bad act of every political candidate ... It is corrupting to have successful, powerful people baldly announce every bad act they have ever engaged in.[30]

Can you imagine Coulter's response if a Democrat had made those arguments defending Clinton?

Coulter's Congressional Credentials

For years Ann Coulter toyed with the idea of "public service" and she has expressed a sometimes fevered desire to wield the reins of political power. She sought a congressional seat – as *both* a Republican and as a Libertarian. What does she consider the *qualifications* of a congressman?

- "But *interestingly*, the *president* was supposed to be a man of *virtue* most of *all*. It was one thing to have scoundrels in the *Congress* or scoundrels as *governors*."[31]
- "Interestingly, all three authors of the Federalist Papers – Hamilton, Jay and Madison – thought that the president alone would always be a virtuous man. They expected congressmen to be scoundrels."[32]

---

27 Thomas J. McFeelay, *The Advocate*, 4/18/99.
28 Ann Coulter, *Fox and Friends*, FNC, 11/23/00.
29 Ann Coulter, *Rivera Live*, CNBC, 8/18/99.
30 Ann Coulter, "Toot in the Bush," 8/25/99.
31 Ann Coulter, *Larry King Live*, CNN, 8/24/98.
32 Ann Coulter, *Crossfire*, CNN, 9/8/98.

- "The only rational reason for anyone to run for a house seat is that great human motivator: fire-breathing, deep-seated, Fred Goldmanesque loathing. … Hate – the fuel that powered the Vast Right-Wing Conspiracy."[33]

So, Ann Coulter believes *hate-mongering scoundrels* are *ideal* congressional candidates?

Coulter once referred to Ross Perot as "a man of little political experience but enormous self-regard,"[34] yet Coulter's *singular* credential for public office is her uncompromising *ego* (an ego which will compromise everything but itself).

But by her *own* standards, Coulter is *eminently* qualified for Congress: she *has* the "loathing" and she *is* a "scoundrel." Contrary to Coulter's claims, I believe the Founding Fathers then – and the American people now – desire *more* from their elected representatives. Several years ago Coulter – *at that time* – agreed: "They're supposed to be *deserving* of esteem."[35]

Chronology of Coulter's Congressional Pursuits

"Serving the Country" – "Congress or Bust" – "Let's Just Call the Whole Thing Off"
I will run. Maybe I'll run. I won't run. I've already served my country, why waste more time?

(Direct quotes of Ann Coulter are underlined.)

6/8/98 "Yes [I've thought about elective office]. It's pretty *clear* I don't have the *diplomatic skills* to run for anything, anything that requires a vote."[36]

Yes, Coulter had previously considered elective office, but she recognized that her "diplomatic skills" precluded any serious candidacy by Coulter.

10/5/98 "Ann Coulter … advised the House Republican 'Theme Team' that President Clinton's multiple scandals cry out for impeachment."[37]

With the publication of *High Crimes and Misdemeanors* in 1998, Coulter's *clout* grew as her quest for power accelerated.

12/3/98 "Chris Shays, my congressman – I'll run against him."[38]

Coulter *unequivocally* declared her intentions to run for Congress.

12/12/98 "I'll be forming an 'exploratory committee' after he actually casts his vote against the rule of law."[39]

12/21/98 "Ann's official statement: 'I am not ruling out a run against Chris Shays, since his vote against the impeachment of a felon.' She is staying strictly within the FEC rules with her statement."[40]

---

33 Ann Coulter, *George*, July 1999.
34 Ann Coulter, "Channeling Jackie O," 12/20/99.
35 Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 6/7/97.
36 Ann Coulter, *Washington Journal*, C-Span, 6/8/98.
37 *U.S. News & World Report*, 10/5/98.
38 Ann Coulter, *Rivera Live*, CNBC, 12/3/98.
39 Ann Coulter e-mail, posted by Joe Shipman, Free Republic Forum, 12/12/98.

12/23/98 "She said she cannot announce due to legalities (she would have to stop her consulting business if she throws her hat in so early). Then she said (with laughter in her voice) that she had not yet decided against running. It's hard to re-create the humor in writing, but the point was clear ... Yep. She's running!"[41]

4/16/99 Ann Coulter's letter to Senator Joseph Lieberman.

Senator Joseph Lieberman
United States Senate
Washington, DC 20510
April 16, 1999

Dear Senator Lieberman:

I understand that you have seen the same press reports I have about my putative plans to run against you for the United States Senate. I thought I should tell you that there is absolutely no truth to these rumors (and, in fact, there is usually no truth to any of the rumors about me that I read in the press). Having spent two years working for the Senate, I can assure you that I would be more likely to bring a RICO action against it than try to join it.

Though I strongly believe that all Senators and Representatives who voted against the impeachment or removal of President Clinton deserve to lose their jobs, I am not quite ready to give up 6 years of my happy and productive life to make that point. Two years of pointless deliberations and quorum calls, maybe; six, not a chance.

Sincerely yours,

Ann H. Coulter

Coulter's letter to Lieberman is worthy of greater analysis, but for now note her combativeness toward a senator who had done her no ill. Note also that she views the work of the legislative branch of government as "pointless" and her own life as "happy and productive." Public service, in her eyes, should not entail sacrifice (for her).

4/18/99 "Coulter, a New Canaan native and columnist, told the Republican Club of Darien she thought Shays, a Stamford Republican, would be challenged next year in the GOP. She stopped short of saying she would run against the seventh-term congressman. But following the breakfast, she told supporters that she would make sure Shays didn't go unchallenged – if she doesn't run, she will find someone who will, she said. … Asked about her goals if she did seek office, Coulter said she would 'bring a little integrity and principle' to the political arena."[42]

Coulter would "bring a little integrity and principle" into the political arena?

---

40 Posted by Clinton's a liar, Free Republic Forum, 12/21/98.
41 Posted by Kate in Palo Alto, Free Republic Forum, 12/23/98.
42 Thomas J. McFeelay, *The Advocate*, 4/18/99.

4/23/99 Ann Coulter, the conservative pundit who grew up in New Canaan, has nixed talk that she may run against U.S. Sen. Joseph I. Lieberman, D-Conn., next year. … A House run, perhaps?"[43]

5/24/99 "I think someone will run and it might be me. … [I'll decide] probably early 2000. ... There are a number of reasons. … No, actually I have no *desire* to [run] in the *abstract*. … It would be candidate specific."[44]

Now Coulter says she *doesn't* want to run for Congress.

5/29/99 "[Jim] Campbell's announcement comes at a time when conservative commentator and political columnist Ann Coulter has said she is deciding whether to challenge Shays next year. Coulter, a New Canaan native, has said she would prefer someone else took up the challenge but has recently couched her interest as 'better than 50-50.'"[45]

6/13/99 From the official National Committee minutes of the American Reform Party:[46]

"The word has come through that, as a result of his signature on the latest CFR discharge petition, Connecticut Representative Chris Shays is now on Tom Delay's target list, with Ann Coulter being tentatively designated as the Hammer's hatchet person. Because of Shays' unique position as a leader for reform on one of our core issues, the CSSC asks for the NC's immediate endorsement of Shays in the GOP primary, along with a public exhortation to people sympathetic to the aims and goals of ARP in Shays' home district to immediately register as Republicans and become involved with Shays' campaign for re-election."

6/29/99 "Coulter sounds like she was spoiling for a fight in an e-mailed response to HOH. 'Once again I am on my knees thanking God for the feminist movement,' she wrote. When asked about whether such attacks will encourage her to stay out of a political run, she responded, 'Ha! That's a laugh. (What, do you think Shays is behind it? That would be a story!).'"[47]

7/3/99 "I might be [running for Congress]. Like Bob Grant, I would have to essentially give up my livelihood the moment I declare. So when I decide, I will be declaring at the very last minute."[48]

7/16/99 "And there's me! ... I don't know. I haven't decided yet [to run for Congress]."[49]

11/1/99 "I heard Ann Coulter speak at Eureka College a couple of weeks ago. ... She, however, didn't seem too enthusiastic about running herself. She recently moved to NYC and doesn't fancy going back to Washington."[50]

---

43 "For the Record," *Hartford Courant*, 4/23/99, pg. A3.
44 Ann Coulter, *Washington Journal*, C-Span, 5/24/99.
45 Thomas J. McFeeley, *The Advocate*, 5/29/99.
46 National Committee minutes originally obtained at http://www.americanreform.org/minutes/nc6-99.html.
47 Ed Henry, "Heard on the Hill," *Roll Call*, 6/29/99.
48 Ann Coulter, *Drudge*, FNC, 7/3/99.
49 Ann Coulter, *Hannity & Colmes*, FNC, 7/16/99.
50 Posted by ishmac, Lucianne Forum, 11/1/99.

Why this *evolution* on her campaign for Congress? Did it correspond with a recognition of her high *negatives* among potential voters,[51] an awareness of her *jeopardy* regarding the Tripp tapes, or concern over what an *investigation* into her affairs might uncover?

1/10/00 "Conservative columnist Ann Coulter, a former New Canaan resident, has also discussed challenging Shays in a Republican primary but has been quiet in recent months. Attempts to reach Coulter yesterday were unsuccessful."[52]

1/21/00 "Frankly, I think I've served my country long enough and I don't, I don't relish the idea of going back and serving it any longer by being, you know, sitting on the Agriculture Cell Phone Parts Committee. ... I'm really not interested in wasting a year of my life when I have a job and a life."[53]

Again we see condescension from Coulter. But just exactly *how* has Coulter served her country? The hazardous duty of a Senate *staffer*? Public service is a *waste* of time? And if the job is *so* unimportant, *now* – why did she want it so much, *then* – and why is it *still* so important *who* is doing the serving?

Did Coulter, who has become a "highly-connected player" in the political arena, forget the *résumé* value of having held congressional office? Hardly a waste of time. Hardly a poor investment. It is far more likely that she concluded she could never win and so tried to save face.

Nonetheless, a Coulter candidacy continued to be promoted.

5/20/00 "Can she still make a run for Congress? The horror, the horror!!!!! I think she's cooked her own goose with her insane media appearances. Any political opponent has a cache of videos to use against her. The dumb cluck … she must be hopped up on something to have such bizarre ambitions and delusions of grandeur."[54]

7/13/00 "Conservative columnist Ann Coulter, a New Canaan native who taunted Mr. Shays in her columns and on television appearances, threatened to challenge the representative last year. She later rescinded, stating she was content with her life as a writer and television personality."[55]

7/20/00 "Well, not so fast [about Coulter's *allegedly aborted* campaign] and I hope you're all this enthusiastic two months from now. … If I declare and run I have to give up all my columns, which is my livelihood. If I were a dentist I could still, you know, keep being a dentist, or a lawyer, keep practicing law. But I'd have to give up what I *do* for a living. And, in fact, there *was* a candidate who actually wants to *be* in Congress, you know, unlike *me* – I just want to defeat Chris Shays. … If I could persuade the Libertarians in Connecticut to put me on their, on their ticket I may still stage a third-party run."[56]

---

51 FreeRepublic.com forums typically favor Ann Coulter about 95% (a large chunk of which glories in Coulter's looks). Townhall.com and Lucianne.com forums view her with about a 75% favorability rating. Salon.com Tabletalk members post with about 98% *unfavorable* with a significant number of people who loathe her. Other non-political forums (e.g., *Politically Incorrect*, and other newsgroups) have disproportionately high *negatives* with most postings being derogatory.

52 Thomas J. McFeeley, "Greenwich man to challenge Shays," *Stamford Advocate*, 1/11/00.

53 Ann Coulter, Young America Foundation's luncheon speech, CPAC, 1/21/00.

54 Post # 2, "Who is Steven O'Malley and why is he polling TT Users about Ann Coulter?" Salon Forum, 5/20/00.

55 Michael C. Juliano, "Congressman Shays Set to Stump for Eighth Term," *Darien News Review*, 7/13/00.

56 Ann Coulter, YAF's 22nd Annual National Conservative Student Conference, 7/20/00.

Coulter not only once again denied *wanting* to *be* in Congress, she denied *being* a *lawyer*.

8/10/00 After months of low-key, long-distance negotiations, Coulter finally meets face-to-face with Libertarian Party leaders in Connecticut to discuss the possibility of Coulter running as a Libertarian. They decline to accept her offer. Yet, the next day, Coulter suggests she is still considering a congressional run.

8/11/00 "It sounds to me like Ann Coulter may be still considering a run for office. During a radio interview on the Michael Savage show, she said she may be busy on Nov. 4th because 'I may be running my own campaign, but I don't know yet so I really can't say anything else about it.'"[57]

Flummoxed at every turn, chagrined at being unable to personally oust Shays, Coulter boasted of trying to throw a congressional race.

9/25/00 "My idea was that I'd run a total sham, media-intensive, third-party Jesse Ventura campaign for one month before the election, and hope for enough votes to cause the (official) Democrat to win."[58]

10/14/00 Daniel Gislao, the Libertarian Party candidate for the Fourth District, issued a press release about Coulter's self-insertion into and attempted takeover of Libertarian Party politics.

10/16/00 I interviewed Daniel Gislao.

[57] Post # 33, Free Republic Forum, August 11, 2000.

[58] Ann Coulter, "I'd burn down my neighbor's house," 9/25/00, http://townhall.com/columnists/anncoulter/2000/09/25/id_burn_down_my_neighbors_house.

Case Study # 4

In the Name of Elián (González)[1]

"Poor Elián. The entire Cold War is being refought on this little 6-year-old's shoulders." – *Ann Coulter*[2]

[Just as Coulter used a sexually-harassed woman as a pawn against Clinton in our first case study, in this fourth case study, Coulter used a young six-year-old Cuban refugee as a pawn in the 2000 presidential election. In doing so, Coulter placed herself above the law by 1) lying about the law, and 2) boasting that she would have broken the law if she could do so. In her zeal, Coulter vilified the father (the boy's closest living relative) and called the boy a "bastard."]

"Poor Elián"

In November 1999, 14 Cubans escaped by boat for refuge in Florida. Only three survived the journey, including a young boy named Elián González, whose mother was lost at sea. From that point on, Elián would become the center of a battle over custody rights within the context of Cold War sensibilities. Was Elián a political refugee, as his deceased mother had intended him to be or should the wishes of his new legal guardian be honored, with the boy reunited with his father?

The Left would show its hypocrisy by finally supporting paternal rights, while the Right's hypocrisy would be evident in its denial of those rights. The future of Elián, a six-year-old boy, garnered international attention, became a campaign issue, and may have impacted Florida's electoral outcome.

Coulter made the custody battle all about fighting the Cold War over again, and lied about constitutional law to serve her agenda. She further eagerly confessed that she would have *broken* the law, thereby potentially endangering the child and his family. Several years later, in *How to Talk to a Liberal*,[3] Coulter devoted an entire lengthy chapter to the Elián González affair reiterating her arguments.

Beyond that, Coulter's decades-long claims about paternal rights have *never* been true. Indeed, she has *fabricated* a house of fictitious legal cards to support her ideological desires of the way life *should* be – the way it would be in the world according to Ann Coulter.

---

1 See Daniel Borchers, "In the Name of Elian," *BrotherWatch*, 2002, http://www.coulterwatch.com/files/01E%20-%20In%20the%20Name%20of%20Elian.pdf.

2 Ann Coulter, *Rivera Live*, CNBC, 5/1/00.

3 See chapter 13, Ann Coulter, *How to Talk to a Liberal (If You Must): The World According to Ann Coulter*, Crown Forum, 2004.

Putative Fathers Have Absolutely No Paternal Rights

The heart and core of Coulter's case for denying Juan Miguel González custody of his own son rested on Coulter's decades-long belief that fathers' have absolutely no rights or responsibilities to their own children except through marriage. Her bogus claims are easily disproven, yet she apparently feels psychologically compelled to make them.

Coulter's censorious spirit and partisan zeal played a far greater role than the actual law in her portrayal of this international crisis. Her Victorian values, coupled with anti-Communist fervor, caused her to side against the biological father in this world-renowned custody battle.

On talk TV – contrary to what the law actually says – Coulter continually insisted that putative fathers have no rights to their children: "The law used to account for these things by saying the father doesn't have rights to a child unless he's married to the mother. That's how a man can claim his heritage and his claims on a child. … That's how a father gets the right to children, by being married to the mother."[4]

Coulter reaffirmed – again and again – that only marriage confers custodial rights: "First of all, the idea that a father has rights to a child by donating sperm; **No**! A father gains rights to a child by being married to the mother. … He has absolutely no rights to the child! Fathers gain rights to children by marrying the mothers."[5] And Coulter condemned precedents for biological rights: "I think in general the family court system in this country is a little too anxious to preserve the biological mother's rights or the biological father's rights."[6]

The only problem with Coulter's claims is that they are false. The law has always upheld the biological rights of fathers, irrespective of whether the child is born out-of-wedlock. Ironically, despite the inherently illogical and ahistorical nature of her views, some pro-family groups – perhaps in trying to promote the nuclear family as a model[7] – failed to see the anti-family nature of denying rights and responsibilities to the biological parents of children.

Lying About Supreme Court Cases

Her view of parental rights was her principal argument to separate a son from his father, but that *core* point of her position, that *central* concept, was an outright *lie*! To buttress that lie – which she has consistently expressed for the last fifteen years – Coulter lied about a Supreme Court ruling which any layman can read and see that it concludes the opposite of her claims. Coulter wrote:

> Let's just consider the initial presumption that a father gets custody of his son. The law is indeed clear, at least to this extent: That "law" refers only to legitimate children. … The

4 Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 1/22/97.
5 Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 1/25/97.
6 Ann Coulter, *Rivera Live*, CNBC, 3/2/00.
7 The advent of in vitro fertilization, surrogate mothers, several high-profile adoptions without paternal consent, and the like, have created legal, societal and familial disruptions which arguably endanger or damage the individuals concerned and society as a whole, but denial of self-evident truths – especially by a constitutional attorney – is ludicrous.

> Supreme Court last weighed in on the legal rights of unwed fathers in 1989 when it cut off all of the father's rights to his child, including visitation.[8]

Her essay title, "The bastardization of justice," certainly points to Coulter's emphasis on Elián's bastardy, but it can also be construed as projection by Coulter, who accomplished the title objective. Coulter literally reversed the decision of the court, falsely claiming it denied those custodial rights. Contrary to Coulter's fiery opinion, the *law* says otherwise. The Supreme Court, *in five cases*, upheld the principle of paternity rights for putative fathers. *Those cases were all cited in the Supreme Court case cited by Coulter*. In a rather remarkable display of truth twisting, Coulter took this Supreme Court case which *confirms* the custody rights of natural fathers and declared it the definitive *denial* of those rights![9]

The father in Coulter's cited case was not denied parental rights due to illegitimacy but because his claim of fatherhood was filed after the filing deadline. That father had failed to assert his rights within two years of his daughter's birth. *Illegitimacy* was never the issue. The Supreme Court has consistently confirmed custodial rights of natural fathers, both in principle and in practice. So, the case Coulter cited says the exact opposite of what Coulter claimed.

"Bald assertions about the very question under dispute," Coulter once wrote, "is an odd method of argument,"[10] yet that is precisely what Coulter did. According to Coulter, "Everyone is entitled to his own opinion; everyone is not entitled to his own facts."[11] Apparently Coulter is not above making up her own "facts."

Amazingly, many pro-family conservatives heralded Coulter's lies as profound and insightful, even though her position on custody is philosophically inconsistent with her own pro-life worldview which purportedly seeks family unification, and her position is legally inaccurate, from common law to the highest court in the land.

Guilty of More Lies

Years after the González case, Coulter continued to publish her lies. In her seventh book, *Guilty* (2009),[12] Coulter condemned single-parent families for the majority of societal ills, with her usual misogynistic bent: she attacked the women who kept their children, not the men who abandoned them. Why? Perhaps because, in her view, fathers fathering children out of wedlock have no rights and no responsibilities to their offspring. In *Guilty*, she again twisted and fabricated history, writing:

> Because of the vital importance of marriage to creating half-decent human beings, a civilized society has traditionally accorded no man rights to his children – and the mother few or no claims upon the father – in the absence of marriage. …

---

8 Ann Coulter, "The bastardization of justice," 4/26/00
9 *Michael H. v. Gerald D.*, 491 U.S. 410 (1989).
10 Ann Coulter, "Miranda Not a 'Constitutional Straightjacket,'" 12/15/99.
11 Ann Coulter, *High Crimes and Misdemeanors: The Case Against Bill Clinton*, Regnery, 1998, pg. 3.
12 Ann Coulter, *Guilty: Liberal "Victims" and Their Assault on America*, Crown Forum, 2009.

> From the beginning of history up until April 3, 1972, the law generally assumed that unwed fathers were not fit to raise their children. It was this statutory presumption that the U.S. Supreme Court struck down in *Stanley v. Illinois* (1972). …
>
> Despite their being nothing in the Constitution about father's rights to children sired out of wedlock, the Supreme Court in *Stanley* found that it had the authority to nullify Illinois's statutory presumption that unwed fathers were unfit parents pursuant to the Due Process Clause of the Fourteenth Amendment.[13]

Coulter also falsely claimed, "It never occurs to anyone to simply return to the original rule: Unless a man is married to a woman when she gives birth to his child, she has no right to his paycheck or his time."[14]

In reality, for most of the history of Western Civilization, society has indeed recognized the parental rights – and responsibilities – of unwed fathers. Moreover, their children have been accorded financial assistance and inheritances based upon paternity, even if the parents were never married. Notably, some royal dynasties have even been abruptly altered due to royal dalliances in which "illegitimate children" were sired.

Coulter Vilified Father of His Bastard Son

Beyond her legal fictions, Coulter also resorted to *ad hominem* attacks in what many regard as contemptible commentary. During that infamous custody battle, Coulter mourned, "Poor Elián. The entire Cold War is being refought on this little 6-year-old's shoulders."[15] How did Coulter defend Elián? By attacking his father!

Coulter wrote of "Juan Miguel González's illegitimate son," "Elián's bastardy," "the man who knocked-up Elián's unwed mother," "Cuba's answer to Joey Buttafuoco," and "Castro's toady." She referred to Elián's father as a "miscreant," "sperm-donor," and a "poor man's Hugh Hefner."[16]

(I'm sure Elián appreciated Ann's "help.")

Coulter Contradictions

Coulter overlooked this glaring obstacle to her legal claim: If the father has no rights at all due to "bastardy," how could the father's relatives in Miami have any possible claim on the child? As one Netizen observed, "Coulter does slash and burn through fathers' rights without any forethought. (Remember that Lazaro González is the uncle of Juan Miguel González. If Elián is not related to Juan Miguel, Elián is not related to Lazaro.) Why does this Elián thing make conservatives abandon principle and logic?"[17]

---

13 *Ibid*., pg. 61.
14 *Ibid*., pg. 67.
15 Ann Coulter, "It takes a Communist dictator to raise a child," 4/12/00.
16 Ann Coulter, *Rivera Live*, CNBC, 5/1/00.
17 Post # 2, Lucianne.com Forum, 5/1/00.

One of Coulter's fans revisited the Elián affair, writing, "I adore Ann Coulter [but] she always came off sounding like she was hissing 'bastard' about that beautiful little boy. The idea that such a young boy would then be deprived of the father he loved, and who loved him, is just awful."[18]

In an astonishing moment on *Rivera Live*, Coulter even admitted that she would have violated the law (and potentially endangered the lives of the family) by notifying the relatives of the FBI's impending rescue of Elián González from his Miami relatives: "I'm not mayor, but I would have alerted the family."[19]

Coulter's Hypocrisy

What are Coulter's own professed ideals regarding the law, Supreme Court cases, and the truth? In 1997, Coulter said:

> The second thing I was going to get to that really drives me crazy, and that is, I mean, you know I'm a lawyer. You take what you have with the facts and you make the best arguments you can, but **you can't go around lying about Supreme Court cases** that are precedent. **You can't lie about what the underlying facts are**. But on TV and in radio **people will just outright lie and it drives you crazy**. If it's like a tennis game, it's like somebody, you know, jumping over the night or walloping you with their racket. Then it's not a fun game. You have to, **you cannot dispute indisputable facts**.[20]

Has Coulter driven *you* crazy yet?

According to Coulter, we want people with a record to see where they stood on the momentous issues of the time; what decisions they made in a time of crisis. In 2007, Coulter challenged others (though not herself):

> What we want is a record. It's one thing to go out and give a speech about audacity and being audacious, but what did you do when the rubber hit the road? What did you do when your constituents were on one side and you thought that was the wrong thing to do? What did you do when your constituents were divided? Where's the profile and courage? Just saying you're audacious and brave does not mean you were audacious and brave. And you see that in the records of Romney and Giuliani. And Anne Thompson, I might add.[21]

By any measure, *Coulter fails her own test*. In a time of crisis, Coulter both denied the Constitution and said that she would have obstructed justice by warning the family that the SWAT team was coming, thereby jeopardizing both the mission and the boy's life.

---

18 Post # 80, Free Republic Forum, 7/9/01.
19 Ann Coulter, *Rivera Live*, CNBC, 5/1/00.
20 Ann Coulter, *Vantage Points: Issues for Women*, Amazon City Radio, 12/5/97 (**emphasis** mine).
21 Ann Coulter, *Glenn Beck Show*, 10/5/07.

Consequences

In the end, Elián was reunited with his father and he returned to Cuba. The much contested presidential election results depended upon a handful of votes in Florida. We may well never know the extent to which the Elián González affair impacted the electoral outcome, but Coulter certainly did everything she could do (and far more than she should do) to effect those results.

Chronology

Here are a few of the key events in this seven-month international drama.[22]

11/22/99	Juan Miguel González-Quintana called Miami relatives to inform them that his son, Elián, and Elián's mother had left Cuba.
1/1/00	Both of Elián's grandmothers traveled to the United States, but returned without the boy.
3/21/00	A Federal judge dismissed the petition by the Miami relatives for asylum for Elián.
3/29/00	Miami-Dade County Mayor Alex Penelas and other civic leaders publicly vowed not to cooperate with federal authorities.
4/13/00	The Justice Department's deadline for Elián to be returned to his father was not met by the Miami relatives.
4/19/00	The 11th Circuit Court of Appeals ruled that Elián must stay in Miami until an appeal for asylum could be filed.
4/20/00	The Justice Department decided to take Elián from the Miami relatives and return him to his father.
4/22/00	Armed with a federal authorization order and weapons, a SWAT team entered the home and took the young child from the Miami relatives.
6/1/00	The 11th U.S. Circuit Court of Appeals ruled that Elián was too young to file for asylum and only his father had legal standing to speak for him.
6/28/00	The U.S. Supreme Court refused to hear the case. Elián, with his father, Juan Miguel González-Quintana, Juan Miguel's wife, their son, and a cousin, returned to Cuba.

[22] See http://www.pbs.org/newshour/bb/law/elian/ for articles and court documents, as well as http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Eli%C3%A1n_Gonz%C3%A1lez.

Case Study # 5

Raising Cain for McCain and Others

"Must Christian conservatives be fascists?" – *Ann Coulter*[1]

[Our fifth case study spotlights Coulter's varied attempts to ensure her that personally anointed candidate – George W. Bush – would be nominated and elected president, irrespective of his actual political platform (which was unknown at the time) and regardless of whom America desired. To accomplish her goal, Coulter vilified any conservative candidate who threatened Bush's nomination. Coulter repeatedly besmirched Sen. John McCain's (R-AZ) character and even called Gary Bauer, who is a man of sterling character, a fascist Christian.]

Coulter Swoons Over Bush-Cheney Ticket

One month before the 2000 election, Coulter swooned over her chosen candidates: "Speaking as a Gyno-American, I'm wallowing in estrogen over this whole Republican ticket. I love both our guys, but my main crush is on Dick Cheney. He is such a man – strong and calm and kind. If this ticket doesn't close the gender gap, it's time to repeal the 19th Amendment."[2]

Though Coulter *crowned* George W. Bush president in the summer of 1999, she acknowledged that "[Bush] isn't even my brand of Republican from what I can tell with this *nonsense* about how *compassionate* he is. I don't know what that *means*. How does that translate into a policy proposal."[3] Yet, even though Bush's platform was largely unknown and he wasn't her "brand of Republican," Coulter crowned Bush the winner due to his enormous campaign war chest. And she attacked anyone threatening his candidacy.

"Christian Conservatism" = Fascism

Coulter's hatred of the Clinton administration was inexhaustible. In 1999, she anointed George W. Bush as the only "electable" Republican candidate among those running and she did all she could to destroy those contenders standing in his way.

Having previously used claims of "fascism" to vilify the Left, Coulter set her sights on the Religious Right in an essay attacking Gary Bauer, whose pro-life position threatened the nomination of her guy, George W. Bush. Her rather bizarre column suggested that Christian conservatism is fascistic and activism by Christian conservatives is unconstitutional. This was particularly bizarre given that Coulter considered herself a Christian conservative. Somehow, Coulter found Gary Bauer's mainstream conservative positions on abortion and homosexuality to be fascistic. Her amazing essay title asked, "Must Christian conservatives be fascists?"[4]

> There have been rumblings among some social conservatives – none too quietly by Gary Bauer on the op-ed page of The New York Times – about George Bush and Dick Cheney selling out conservative values on the issues of gay marriage

1 Ann Coulter, "Must Christian Conservatives Be Fascists?" 10/13/00.
2 Ann Coulter, *National Review*, 10/6/00.
3 Ann Coulter, *Fox Face Off*, FNC, 6/18/99.
4 Ann Coulter, "Must Christian Conservatives Be Fascists?" 10/13/00.

> and abortion. I am second to none in my right-wing lunacy, but Bush and Cheney were right and the disgruntled are wrong. …
>
> But back briefly to the real Constitution, the one composed of words and not "penumbras" – the Constitution nowhere grants the president, Congress or the Supreme Court authority either to ban or to require abortion. It grants no one in the federal government the right to ban or require gay marriage. It doesn't say anything at all about abortion or gay marriage – or lots of other things, many of them big and important (like free champagne for blondes).

Having dispensed with her own convictions to throw a congressional race to the opposing party – expecting a third party to play fall guy – now Coulter discarded her most cherished beliefs on abortion and sexual relationships solely for partisan purposes – and she expected Christian conservatives to betray their faith for her party.

At the very time she was pummeling the Libertarian Party over its efforts to legalize marijuana, she criticized pro-lifers for seeking legal remedies to abortion. Coulter somehow found drug-enforcement (and presumably concomitant search-and-seizure and property-confiscation) constitutional, but declared that neither abortion nor homosexuality appear in the Constitution. Do drugs appear in the Constitution?

However, many constitutional experts view the pro-life position as eminently constitutional and regard *Roe v. Wade* as unconstitutional, worthy of being overturned. Pro-lifers assert that defining embryonic life as human life would then allow for recognition of their constitutional (and human) rights. Don't conservatives believe that *Roe* should be overturned as an infringement on the rights of the unborn? Would Coulter have upheld *Dred Scott*?

Nicholas Sanchez, Director of Development for Free Congress Foundation, responded to Coulter's defamatory column.[5]

> However, W. is Coulter's man. And as lovers see through filtered eyes, so do hipster politicos who have tied themselves to a political candidate. Should you dare to criticize Bush, you will quickly feel the sharp sting of Ms. Coulter's words as she protects 'her man,' with every bit the enthusiasm of a high school girl cheering on her boyfriend.
>
> Back in August of 1999, when questions were then circling around as to whether or not W. had ever used cocaine, Coulter blasted those who would bring up such questions and advised the Governor to keep his mouth shut on the matter. …
>
> This attitude of Ms. Coulter has continued on unabated. And like the Grand Inquisitor, she has cast out heretics on the right who dare to utter even the mildest objection to the way George Bush and his running mate, Dick Cheney, have handled themselves during the campaign. The most recent object of Ms. Coulter's wrath has been Gary Bauer. …
>
> In his article,[6] Bauer basically spells out to Bush how not to depress the conservative vote in what may be the closest election since 1968.

---

5 Nicholas Sanchez, "Notable News Now," Free Congress Foundation, 10/20/00.

6 http://www.freerepublic.com/forum/a39dff0b61c87.htm.

> This helpful hint was too much for Coulter who castigated Bauer, in an article posted on the *Jewish World Review* website, for wanting to promulgate federal laws that would 'outlaw sex education, communism, atheism, condoms, Birkenstocks, *New York Times* editorials . . .' etc., etc. Of course, Bauer suggested nothing of the kind.

This is yet another example of how Coulter compromises her own convictions and calls on others to compromise theirs. She lied, unjustly called her opponents liars, and even lied about what her compatriots said.

Fascism for the Few

Decrying the "fascist" label, Coulter *uses* the fascist label when it suits her purposes. Witness Gary Bauer and Christian conservatives everywhere!

One year earlier, Coulter complained, writing, "Obviously, I'm no enemy of colorful rhetoric, as my avid readers know. But there's a difference between accusing people of being 'nattering nabobs of negativism' or of 'kissing the ring of the NRA' and somberly declaring someone a 'fascist.' Or there ought to be."[7]

So calling people fascist is out-of-bounds? Then why does Coulter use that term? So frequently? Radio talk show host Larry O'Connor recently advised an irate conservative caller, "When you can avoid it, don't compare your political opponents to Nazis."[8] Would that Coulter would heed his advice.

In the months immediately preceding and following her prohibition *against* using "fascist," Coulter used that *very* word, or a form thereof, in numerous columns, to describe her opponents.

- "In the 111 years since Nietzsche made his famous prediction, the world has witnessed Stalin, Mao, Hitler, and Pol Pot, to name a few world leaders, murdering their own people in the name of communism and fascism (a piker by comparison)."[9]
- "Congress controls the distribution of $1.7 trillion dollars of taxpayers' money every year. With $1.7 trillion at stake, a total fascistic state could not keep these guys from being bought. But the Times thinks it would be a good start if we could just restrict more core first amendment free speech."[10]
- "The idea that this most fascistically controlling of political parties believes in giving people the right to 'choose,' is so completely preposterous as to send rational people screaming from the room."[11]
- "If you give humans power over other humans that their natural instinct is to be fascist."[12]
- "I especially want potential assailants to have to worry that I might be carrying. In numerous surveys, criminals have confirmed the blindingly obvious point that they are disinclined to attack a victim who might be armed. Countries with those fabulously low crime rates and fabulously fascistic gun control laws – such as Canada, the Netherlands, and Britain – have more burglaries of occupied homes per capita than we do. Canada's burglary rate of occupied homes is more than three times that of the armed-to-the-teeth U.S. Although the murder rate is lower in Britain, rape, robbery, burglary, and assault are all substantially higher there than in the U.S."[13]

---

7 Ann Coulter, "Shut up, he explained," 9/29/99.
8 Larry O'Connor, *Mornings on the Mall*, WBAL, 12/28/12.
9 Ann Coulter, "Stockpile Now: Total Eclipse of All values Coming," *Human Events*, 5/8/99.
10 Ann Coulter, "They Just Shouldn't Be Worth Very Much," *Human Events*, 5/12/99.
11 Ann Coulter, "In Praise of the Litmus Test," *Human Events*, 7/14/99.
12 Ann Coulter, *Rivera Live*, CNBC, 7/28/99.
13 Ann Coulter, "Annie's Got Her Gun," *George*, August 1999.

- "The lesson of this and many other happy travel stories is that humans are fascists by nature. Give some humans control over other humans and they will seamlessly transform into brownshirts – patting you down, ripping apart your belongings, breaking your valuables, telling you where to stand, to drink, to smoke, and when to go to the bathroom. And if you complain they will arrest you. Worse, they will bump you or your luggage or take away your nice aisle seat and give you a center seat."[14]
- "Admittedly, I have seen plenty of dumb and nasty passengers and also plenty of patient – saintly – airline employees, who have completely suppressed the human instinct to fascism. And that's not just the Stockholm Syndrome speaking."
- "Americans may vote for creeping socialism, but deep in their beings they sense that they are still free, that this is not yet Orwell's '1984.' As long as there are some people who are not willing to roll over for the airline fascists and be docile sheep … there will be John Davises."
- "But to left-wing fascists, using the criminal justice system to promote thought-control apparently seemed like an excellent investment of the taxpayers' money."[15]
- "Fascists took places No. 1, 5, 8, 13 and 17, for a combined total of 3,779 votes (Adolf Hitler, Dr. Josef Mengele, Adolf Eichmann, Benito Mussolini and Ivan the Terrible). Excluding the Clintons, communists took Nos. 3, 4 and 18, for a combined total of 2,486 votes (Josef Stalin, Pol Pot, Fidel Castro)."[16]

Coulter *denounces* using the word "fascist" even as she *uses* it. It gets worse! Coulter *deplores* fascism itself even as she *endorses* it for her purposes. "Don't get me wrong, some of my best friends are libertarians," Coulter explained. "My complaint with them is, they don't appreciate the virtues of local fascism."[17] On another occasion, Coulter reiterated her views, "My libertarian friends are probably getting a little upset now but I think that's because they never appreciate the benefits of local fascism."[18]

So it all depends on *who* wields the power! [And Coulter desires to wield it *herself*!]

Enemy of the Moment

Prior to 9/11, Coulter declared hatred the *patriotic duty* of every American: "If you don't hate Clinton and the people who labored to keep him in office, you don't love your country."[19] On election eve, Coulter reaffirmed her unchristian sentiments: "Oh, how I hate them!"[20]

Her election eve rant professed hatred and sought revenge for eight years of the Clintons: "And, oh, how I hate the waiting. To quote wacky comic Prof. Irwin Corey, when asked about his feelings on the subject of love: 'I like love, because it's so close to hate. And without hate, there could be no revenge.' Tomorrow, we take revenge."[21]

---

14 Ann Coulter, "Air travel made unpleasant by overbearing personnel," 8/4/99
15 Ann Coulter, "Addicted to thought control," 10/8/99.
16 Ann Coulter, "Poll says Clinton is second-most evil man of millennium," 11/19/99.
17 Annys Shin, "Blonde Ambition on the Right," *National Journal*, 5/31/97.
18 Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 2/8/97.
19 Ann Coulter, "Annie's Got Her Gun," *George*, July 1999.
20 Ann Coulter, *National Review*, 11/7/00.
21 Ann Coulter, *National Review*, 11/7/00.

Consequently, Coulter grew to hate all those who stood in the way of that outcome. Regarding Sen. John McCain (R-AZ), she said, "I used to love him, then I liked him, now I despise him."[22] What happened? "I just grew to hate him."[23]

Coulter transitioned from 1999 to 2000 with a whole series of attacks against McCain because Coulter was backing Bush for president. Adopting the Orwellian "enemy-of-the-moment" strategy and applying it to the particular, Coulter (alone among Americans) continuously questioned McCain's *integrity*.

These gems are but a sampling of her attacks on McCain:

- "Courageous, independent, or bought? ... shilling [for] the newspaper industry in return for favors worth millions of dollars in campaign donations."[24]
- "the Times' sycophantic lackey"[25]
- "wholly owned subsidiaries of *The New York Times*"[26]
- "I thought I'd take one last opportunity to attack John McCain."[27]
- "The only Republican who can hold a candle to Democrats in Orwellian newspeak is John McCain."[28]
- "his real constituency is the editors of *The New York Times*,"[29]
- "What's more amazing is really the media's orgasm over McCain. He's the *New York Times'* candidate. He's Geraldo's candidate. He's Chris Matthews' candidate."[30]
- "media Wonder Boy John McCain"[31]
- "senator from *The New York Times*"[32]
- "marionette of *The New York Times*"[33]
- "McCain headquarters in the editorial offices of *The New York Times*"[34]

Coulter described her evolving emotions toward McCain: "You know, I used to really, really like [John McCain], and then when I worked in the Senate I was lukewarm, and then during the primaries, I just grew to hate him. I think he is the Republican Clinton. He is a demagogue. He really cares more about what *The New York Times* writes about him than what is best for the country."[35]

But Coulter – and Coulter *alone* – really knew what was best for the country.

---

22 Ann Coulter, quoted in *Washington Post*, 8/1/00.
23 Joe Sabia, "Coulter: The Interview," *Cornell Review*, 5/1/01.
24 Ann Coulter, "When 'reform' means tilting the balance of influence," 10/20/99.
25 *Ibid*.
26 *Ibid*.
27 Ann Coulter, CPAC Conference 2000, 1/21/00.
28 Ann Coulter, "Summing up Campaign 2000: 'Oh, puh-leeze!'" 2/2/00.
29 Ann Coulter, quoted in "Exit Poll," *Salon*, 2/2/00.
30 Ann Coulter, *Salon*, 2/2/00.
31 Ann Coulter, "The Shakedown Express," 2/9/00.
32 Ann Coulter, "I've Seen Enough Killing to Support Abortion," 2/18/00.
33 Ann Coulter, "The Bluebloods Voted Against You," 3/8/00.
34 Ann Coulter, "All the News that Fits – We Print!" 3/24/00.
35 Joe Sabia, "Coulter: The Interview," *Cornell Review*, 5/1/01.

Case Study # 5

Raising Cain for McCain and Others

"Must Christian conservatives be fascists?" – *Ann Coulter*[1]

[Our fifth case study spotlights Coulter's varied attempts to ensure her that personally anointed candidate – George W. Bush – would be nominated and elected president, irrespective of his actual political platform (which was unknown at the time) and regardless of whom America desired. To accomplish her goal, Coulter vilified any conservative candidate who threatened Bush's nomination. Coulter repeatedly besmirched Sen. John McCain's (R-AZ) character and even called Gary Bauer, who is a man of sterling character, a fascist Christian.]

Coulter Swoons Over Bush-Cheney Ticket

One month before the 2000 election, Coulter swooned over her chosen candidates: "Speaking as a Gyno-American, I'm wallowing in estrogen over this whole Republican ticket. I love both our guys, but my main crush is on Dick Cheney. He is such a man – strong and calm and kind. If this ticket doesn't close the gender gap, it's time to repeal the 19th Amendment."[2]

Though Coulter *crowned* George W. Bush president in the summer of 1999, she acknowledged that "[Bush] isn't even my brand of Republican from what I can tell with this *nonsense* about how *compassionate* he is. I don't know what that *means*. How does that translate into a policy proposal."[3] Yet, even though Bush's platform was largely unknown and he wasn't her "brand of Republican," Coulter crowned Bush the winner due to his enormous campaign war chest. And she attacked anyone threatening his candidacy.

"Christian Conservatism" = Fascism

Coulter's hatred of the Clinton administration was inexhaustible. In 1999, she anointed George W. Bush as the only "electable" Republican candidate among those running and she did all she could to destroy those contenders standing in his way.

Having previously used claims of "fascism" to vilify the Left, Coulter set her sights on the Religious Right in an essay attacking Gary Bauer, whose pro-life position threatened the nomination of her guy, George W. Bush. Her rather bizarre column suggested that Christian conservatism is fascistic and activism by Christian conservatives is unconstitutional. This was particularly bizarre given that Coulter considered herself a Christian conservative. Somehow, Coulter found Gary Bauer's mainstream conservative positions on abortion and homosexuality to be fascistic. Her amazing essay title asked, "Must Christian conservatives be fascists?"[4]

> There have been rumblings among some social conservatives – none too quietly by Gary Bauer on the op-ed page of The New York Times – about George Bush and Dick Cheney selling out conservative values on the issues of gay marriage

1 Ann Coulter, "Must Christian Conservatives Be Fascists?" 10/13/00.
2 Ann Coulter, *National Review*, 10/6/00.
3 Ann Coulter, *Fox Face Off*, FNC, 6/18/99.
4 Ann Coulter, "Must Christian Conservatives Be Fascists?" 10/13/00.

> and abortion. I am second to none in my right-wing lunacy, but Bush and Cheney were right and the disgruntled are wrong. …
>
> But back briefly to the real Constitution, the one composed of words and not "penumbras" – the Constitution nowhere grants the president, Congress or the Supreme Court authority either to ban or to require abortion. It grants no one in the federal government the right to ban or require gay marriage. It doesn't say anything at all about abortion or gay marriage – or lots of other things, many of them big and important (like free champagne for blondes).

Having dispensed with her own convictions to throw a congressional race to the opposing party – expecting a third party to play fall guy – now Coulter discarded her most cherished beliefs on abortion and sexual relationships solely for partisan purposes – and she expected Christian conservatives to betray their faith for her party.

At the very time she was pummeling the Libertarian Party over its efforts to legalize marijuana, she criticized pro-lifers for seeking legal remedies to abortion. Coulter somehow found drug-enforcement (and presumably concomitant search-and-seizure and property-confiscation) constitutional, but declared that neither abortion nor homosexuality appear in the Constitution. Do drugs appear in the Constitution?

However, many constitutional experts view the pro-life position as eminently constitutional and regard *Roe v. Wade* as unconstitutional, worthy of being overturned. Pro-lifers assert that defining embryonic life as human life would then allow for recognition of their constitutional (and human) rights. Don't conservatives believe that *Roe* should be overturned as an infringement on the rights of the unborn? Would Coulter have upheld *Dred Scott*?

Nicholas Sanchez, Director of Development for Free Congress Foundation, responded to Coulter's defamatory column.[5]

> However, W. is Coulter's man. And as lovers see through filtered eyes, so do hipster politicos who have tied themselves to a political candidate. Should you dare to criticize Bush, you will quickly feel the sharp sting of Ms. Coulter's words as she protects 'her man,' with every bit the enthusiasm of a high school girl cheering on her boyfriend.
>
> Back in August of 1999, when questions were then circling around as to whether or not W. had ever used cocaine, Coulter blasted those who would bring up such questions and advised the Governor to keep his mouth shut on the matter. …
>
> This attitude of Ms. Coulter has continued on unabated. And like the Grand Inquisitor, she has cast out heretics on the right who dare to utter even the mildest objection to the way George Bush and his running mate, Dick Cheney, have handled themselves during the campaign. The most recent object of Ms. Coulter's wrath has been Gary Bauer. …
>
> In his article, Bauer basically spells out to Bush how not to depress the conservative vote in what may be the closest election since 1968.
>
> This helpful hint was too much for Coulter who castigated Bauer, in an article posted on the *Jewish World Review* website, for wanting to promulgate federal laws that would

[5] Nicholas Sanchez, "Notable News Now," Free Congress Foundation, 10/20/00.

> 'outlaw sex education, communism, atheism, condoms, Birkenstocks, *New York Times* editorials . . .' etc., etc. Of course, Bauer suggested nothing of the kind.

This is yet another example of how Coulter compromises her own convictions and calls on others to compromise theirs. She lied, unjustly called her opponents liars, and even lied about what her compatriots said.

Fascism for the Few

Decrying the "fascist" label, Coulter *uses* the fascist label when it suits her purposes. Witness Gary Bauer and Christian conservatives everywhere!

One year earlier, Coulter complained, writing, "Obviously, I'm no enemy of colorful rhetoric, as my avid readers know. But there's a difference between accusing people of being 'nattering nabobs of negativism' or of 'kissing the ring of the NRA' and somberly declaring someone a 'fascist.' Or there ought to be."[6]

So calling people fascist is out-of-bounds? Then why does Coulter use that term? So frequently? Radio talk show host Larry O'Connor recently advised an irate conservative caller, "When you can avoid it, don't compare your political opponents to Nazis."[7] Would that Coulter would heed his advice.

In the months immediately preceding and following her prohibition *against* using "fascist," Coulter used that *very* word, or a form thereof, in numerous columns, to describe her opponents.

- "In the 111 years since Nietzsche made his famous prediction, the world has witnessed Stalin, Mao, Hitler, and Pol Pot, to name a few world leaders, murdering their own people in the name of communism and fascism (a piker by comparison)."[8]
- "Congress controls the distribution of $1.7 trillion dollars of taxpayers' money every year. With $1.7 trillion at stake, a total fascistic state could not keep these guys from being bought. But the Times thinks it would be a good start if we could just restrict more core first amendment free speech."[9]
- "The idea that this most fascistically controlling of political parties believes in giving people the right to 'choose,' is so completely preposterous as to send rational people screaming from the room."[10]
- "If you give humans power over other humans that their natural instinct is to be fascist."[11]
- "I especially want potential assailants to have to worry that I might be carrying. In numerous surveys, criminals have confirmed the blindingly obvious point that they are disinclined to attack a victim who might be armed. Countries with those fabulously low crime rates and fabulously fascistic gun control laws – such as Canada, the Netherlands, and Britain – have more burglaries of occupied homes per capita than we do. Canada's burglary rate of occupied homes is more than three times that of the armed-to-the-teeth U.S. Although the murder rate is lower in Britain, rape, robbery, burglary, and assault are all substantially higher there than in the U.S."[12]
- "The lesson of this and many other happy travel stories is that humans are fascists by nature. Give some humans control over other humans and they will seamlessly transform into brownshirts –

---

6 Ann Coulter, "Shut up, he explained," 9/29/99.
7 Larry O'Connor, *Mornings on the Mall*, WBAL, 12/28/12.
8 Ann Coulter, "Stockpile Now: Total Eclipse of All values Coming," *Human Events*, 5/8/99.
9 Ann Coulter, "They Just Shouldn't Be Worth Very Much," *Human Events*, 5/12/99.
10 Ann Coulter, "In Praise of the Litmus Test," *Human Events*, 7/14/99.
11 Ann Coulter, *Rivera Live*, CNBC, 7/28/99.
12 Ann Coulter, "Annie's Got Her Gun," *George*, August 1999.

patting you down, ripping apart your belongings, breaking your valuables, telling you where to stand, to drink, to smoke, and when to go to the bathroom. And if you complain they will arrest you. Worse, they will bump you or your luggage or take away your nice aisle seat and give you a center seat."[13]

- "Admittedly, I have seen plenty of dumb and nasty passengers and also plenty of patient – saintly – airline employees, who have completely suppressed the human instinct to fascism. And that's not just the Stockholm Syndrome speaking."
- "Americans may vote for creeping socialism, but deep in their beings they sense that they are still free, that this is not yet Orwell's '1984.' As long as there are some people who are not willing to roll over for the airline fascists and be docile sheep … there will be John Davises."
- "But to left-wing fascists, using the criminal justice system to promote thought-control apparently seemed like an excellent investment of the taxpayers' money."[14]
- "Fascists took places No. 1, 5, 8, 13 and 17, for a combined total of 3,779 votes (Adolf Hitler, Dr. Josef Mengele, Adolf Eichmann, Benito Mussolini and Ivan the Terrible). Excluding the Clintons, communists took Nos. 3, 4 and 18, for a combined total of 2,486 votes (Josef Stalin, Pol Pot, Fidel Castro)."[15]

Coulter *denounces* using the word "fascist" even as she *uses* it. It gets worse! Coulter *deplores* fascism itself even as she *endorses* it for her purposes. "Don't get me wrong, some of my best friends are libertarians," Coulter explained. "My complaint with them is, they don't appreciate the virtues of local fascism."[16] On another occasion, Coulter reiterated her views, "My libertarian friends are probably getting a little upset now but I think that's because they never appreciate the benefits of local fascism."[17]

So it all depends on *who* wields the power! [And Coulter desires to wield it *herself*!]

Enemy of the Moment

Prior to 9/11, Coulter declared hatred the *patriotic duty* of every American: "If you don't hate Clinton and the people who labored to keep him in office, you don't love your country."[18] On election eve, Coulter reaffirmed her unchristian sentiments: "Oh, how I hate them!"[19]

Her election eve rant professed hatred and sought revenge for eight years of the Clintons: "And, oh, how I hate the waiting. To quote wacky comic Prof. Irwin Corey, when asked about his feelings on the subject of love: 'I like love, because it's so close to hate. And without hate, there could be no revenge.' Tomorrow, we take revenge."[20]

Consequently, Coulter grew to hate all those who stood in the way of that outcome. Regarding Sen. John McCain (R-AZ), she

by overbearing personnel," 8/4/99
" 10/8/99.
most evil man of millennium," 11/19/99.
nt," *National Journal*, 5/31/97.

rge, July 1999.

said, "I used to love him, then I liked him, now I despise him."[21] What happened? "I just grew to hate him."[22]

Coulter transitioned from 1999 to 2000 with a whole series of attacks against McCain because Coulter was backing Bush for president. Adopting the Orwellian "enemy-of-the-moment" strategy and applying it to the particular, Coulter (alone among Americans) continuously questioned McCain's *integrity*.

These gems are but a sampling of her attacks on McCain:

- "Courageous, independent, or bought? ... shilling [for] the newspaper industry in return for favors worth millions of dollars in campaign donations."[23]
- "the Times' sycophantic lackey"[24]
- "wholly owned subsidiaries of *The New York Times*"[25]
- "I thought I'd take one last opportunity to attack John McCain."[26]
- "The only Republican who can hold a candle to Democrats in Orwellian newspeak is John McCain."[27]
- "his real constituency is the editors of *The New York Times*,"[28]
- "What's more amazing is really the media's orgasm over McCain. He's the *New York Times'* candidate. He's Geraldo's candidate. He's Chris Matthews' candidate."[29]
- "media Wonder Boy John McCain"[30]
- "senator from *The New York Times*"[31]
- "marionette of *The New York Times*"[32]
- "McCain headquarters in the editorial offices of *The New York Times*"[33]

Coulter described her evolving emotions toward McCain: "You know, I used to really, really like [John McCain], and then when I worked in the Senate I was lukewarm, and then during the primaries, I just grew to hate him. I think he is the Republican Clinton. He is a demagogue. He really cares more about what *The New York Times* writes about him than what is best for the country."[34]

But Coulter – and Coulter *alone* – really knew what was best for the country.

---

21 Ann Coulter, quoted in *Washington Post*, 8/1/00.
22 Joe Sabia, "Coulter: The Interview," *Cornell Review*, 5/1/01.
23 Ann Coulter, "When 'reform' means tilting the balance of influence," 10/20/99.
24 *Ibid*.
25 *Ibid*.
26 Ann Coulter, CPAC Conference 2000, 1/21/00.
27 Ann Coulter, "Summing up Campaign 2000: 'Oh, puh-leeze!'" 2/2/00.
28 Ann Coulter, quoted in "Exit Poll," *Salon*, 2/2/00.
29 Ann Coulter, *Salon*, 2/2/00.
30 Ann Coulter, "The Shakedown Express," 2/9/00.
31 Ann Coulter, "I've Seen Enough Killing to Support Abortion," 2/18/00.
32 Ann Coulter, "The Bluebloods Voted Against You," 3/8/00.
33 Ann Coulter, "All the News that Fits – We Print!" 3/24/00.
34 Joe Sabia, "Coulter: The Interview," *Cornell Review*, 5/1/01.

Case Study # 6

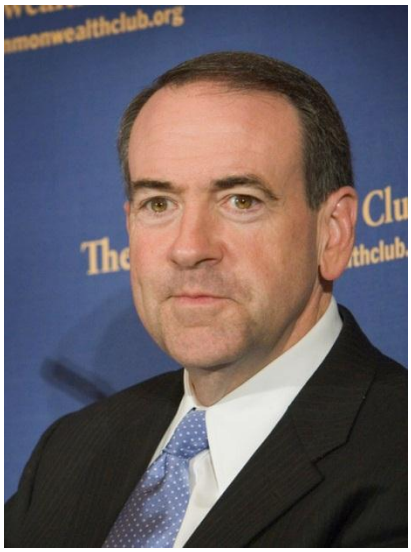
Let's Get Drunk and Vote for John McCain

"I will campaign for [Hillary Clinton] if it's McCain." – *Ann Coulter*[1]

[Like the previous case study, this sixth one focuses on Coulter's manipulation of the truth in a presidential election, this time in 2008, and, again, Coulter told some pretty good whoppers! This time, she not only tarnished the reputation of McCain, widely recognized and regarded as an honorable man, Coulter also claimed she would campaign for Hillary Clinton, whom she extolled as more conservative than McCain.]

Humiliating Huckabee and Thompson

As in previous election cycles, Coulter was willing to do *anything* she had to in order to get her chosen candidate elected. During the 2008 presidential election cycle, Coulter determined that then-Gov. Mitt Romney (R-MA) was the most electable Republican, despite his flip-flopping and mishmash of positions on social issues – those very same social issues which are so crucial to Coulter's conservatism.[2]



Former Gov. Mike Huckabee (R-AR) threatened Romney, particularly on the social issues and with evangelical voters, so Coulter smeared Huckabee, saying, "He's a stupid Christian…He isn't very bright. He's [the liberal media's] vision of an evangelical. They'd like him better if he still weighed 600 pounds."[3]

In one essay satirizing their southern roots, Coulter mocked both Huckabee and Sen. Fred Thompson (R-TN); the former on his immigration positions and the latter on his vote against impeachment.[4]

In a later essay, written to "address the urgent matter of evangelical Christians getting blamed for Mike Huckabee. To paraphrase the Jews, this is 'bad for the evangelicals.'"[5] Calling Huckabee "cornpone," as she did the Clintons in previous years, Coulter insisted, "As far as I can tell, it's mostly secular liberals swooning over Huckabee. Liberals adore Huckabee because he fits their image of what an evangelical should be: stupid and easily led." Coulter further falsely alleged that Huckabee is "one of those pro-sodomy, pro-gay marriage, pro-evolution evangelical Christians."

In another essay mocking Huckabee's name, Coulter jabs, "Huckabee is a 'compassionate conservative' only in the sense that calling him a conservative is being compassionate."[6] She again gratuitously inserts "cornpone" into her defamation of Huckabee's character: "So this little stretch-marked cornpone is either lying, has a closed head injury, is a complete ignoramus – or all of the above." Her critical assessment of

---

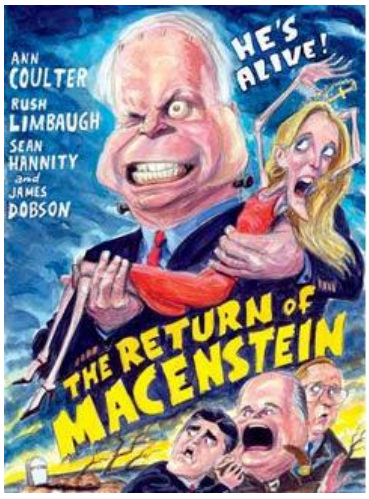
1 Ann Coulter, *Hannity & Colmes*, FNC, 2/3/08, http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=qhPTjjQW5t8.
2 See http://www.anncoulterapology.com/.
3 Ann Coulter, *Huckabee*, FNC, 1/10/09, http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=3XlyDU0D1Vs.
4 Ann Coulter, "Fred Sawyer and Huckabee Finn," 10/10/07.
5 Ann Coulter, "There's a Huckabee Born Every Minute," 12/19/07.
6 Ann Coulter, "Liberals sing Huckelujah," 12/26/07.

his character concludes with this doozy: "Liberals take a perverse pleasure in touting Huckabee because they know he will give them everything they want – big government and a Christian they can roll."

McCain vs. Clinton

Early in the race, McCain's campaign seemed doomed, but then he staged a comeback. To counter, Coulter declared that **Hillary Clinton was more conservative than John McCain** ("I think [Hillary Clinton] would be stronger on the war on terrorism. I absolutely believe that. … I will campaign for her if it's McCain").[7]

On a later show, Coulter reaffirmed her hatred for McCain, saying, "But I'm not going to vote for a Democrat, so I won't vote for John McCain."[8] She insisted that "Hillary would be better on national security." Earlier at a CPAC conference, Coulter quipped, "The only way I can promise that I won't vote for Hillary Clinton is if John McCain appoints her as his vice president."[9]



POW's get no respect in Coulter's world as evidenced by her remarks at CPAC: "I know that [he was a POW], because he mentions it more often than Kerry mentions he was in Vietnam. There were hundreds of POWs and we are not going to make all of them president. Can't we find a POW who doesn't want to shut down Guantanamo."[10]

Pushing her candidate, Coulter claimed, "McCain and Romney are mirror opposites of one another. Romney is a conservative who had to win votes from liberals in Massachusetts. McCain is a liberal who had to win votes from conservatives in Arizona." Moreover, Coulter boasted that if McCain were to be inaugurated, since she had led an impeachment movement before, she could "lead another one."

Obama and McCain are <u>Both</u> Like Hitler?

As anyone politically conscious this past decade (and longer), Coulter regularly employs Nazi imagery. Surprisingly, she compared both Barack Obama and John McCain to Hitler – in the same election year. Coulter wrote, "Has anybody read this book [*Dreams from My Father: A Story of Race and Inheritance*]? Inasmuch as the book reveals Obama to be a flabbergasting lunatic, I gather the answer is no. Obama is about to be our next president: You might want to take a peek. If only people had read 'Mein Kampf.'"[11]

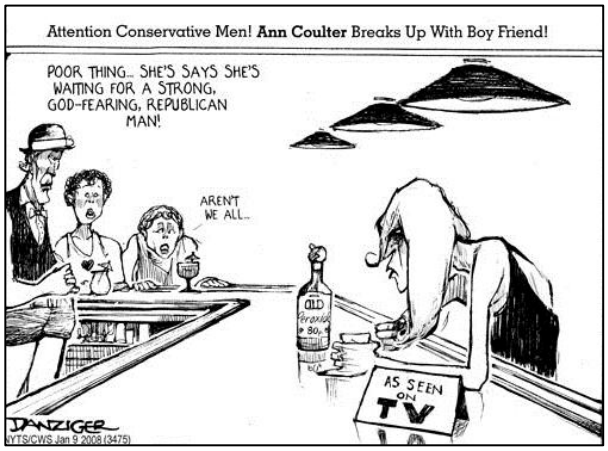
---

7 Ann Coulter, *Hannity & Colmes*, FNC, 2/3/08, http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=qhPTjjQW5t8.
8 Ann Coulter, *Hannity & Colmes*, FNC, 4/3/08.
9 Ann Coulter, CPAC, 2/8/08.
10 Ann Coulter, CPAC, 2/8/08.
11 Ann Coulter, "Obama's autobiography is a must-read," 4/2/08.

Coulter later reiterated "[Obama's autobiography is] a dime store *Mein Kampf*" [and Obama is a two-bit Hitler]."[12] As for McCain, Coulter actually *favored* Hitler over McCain, asserting, "I'm not comparing McCain to Hitler. Hitler had a coherent tax policy."[13]

Let's Just Get Drunk and Give Me More Publicity

Upon McCain's victory as the GOP's presidential candidate, Coulter reluctantly conceded to the inevitable, but with her own characteristically unique spin. On *Hannity and Colmes*, Coulter announced her self-promoting way of campaigning or McCain by launching a website: GetdrunkandvoteforJohnMcCain.com.



Hannity: And he's been afraid to be on the Fox News Channel.

Colmes: I think he's not afraid. He's been on the morning show, "Fox & Friends" and he's been on with Chris Wallace on Fox News. I think he should come on. He should come on the show and so should John McCain. Hello, Ann Coulter. How you're sitting here very quietly right now. By the way …

Coulter: I'm letting him defend McCain.

Colmes: By the way, I want to point out that he's – you're a big McCain fan, right?

Coulter: I happen to have just started the most effective pro-McCain website on the web.

Colmes: What's that?

Coulter: GetdrunkandvoteforJohnMcCain.com.

Colmes: So in other words, you have to be drunk.

Coulter: And by the way, since I started it …

Colmes: Wait a minute.

Coulter: … he started surging in the polls.

Colmes: In other words, so your position is, let me get this straight: you have to be drunk to support John McCain?

Coulter: Apparently, it's working. Have you seen the polls since I started the website?

Amazing! Coulter's disdain for McCain is so unrelenting that she can't even say one word to defend him, yet will take credit for his resurgence in the polls, citing her snarky website as the cause.

[12] Ann Coulter, *Hannity & Colmes*, FNC, 4/3/08.
[13] Ann Coulter, CPAC, 2/8/08.

On McCain's Defeat

McCain lost. He lost big. How did Coulter react? By blaming the candidate, his message, and all those who supported him.[14] In her first post-election essay,[15] Coulter wrote, "John McCain is a winner because he can resume buying more houses. And we're all winners because we will never again have to hear McCain say, "my friends."

Following that frivolity, Coulter provided advice she should have heeded four years later:

> How many times do we have to run this experiment before Republican primary voters learn that "moderate," "independent," "maverick" Republicans never win, and right-wing Republicans never lose?

Coulter then applauded the ascendancy of Sarah Palin: "Indeed, the only good thing about McCain is that he gave us a genuine conservative, Sarah Palin. He's like one of those insects that lives just long enough to reproduce so that the species can survive. That's why a lot of us are referring to Sarah as 'The One' these days." Coulter continued:

"Like Sarah Connor in 'The Terminator,' Sarah Palin is destined to give birth to a new movement. That's why the Democrats are trying to kill her. And Arnold Schwarzenegger is involved somehow, too. Good Lord, I'm tired."

After such high praise, and later writing a Woman of the Year feature on Palin for *Human Events*, and an entry on Palin for *Time's* 100 Most Influential People of the Year, Coulter's heart has changed toward Palin. Surprisingly, within a few short years, Coulter would belittle Palin, seemingly trying to clip her wings.

Coulter waned revenge against the Libertarian Party for rejecting her.[16] Coulter wanted revenge after eight years of the Clintons. Here her lust for vengeance re-emerged with threats for individuals and states.

> After showing nearly superhuman restraint throughout this campaign, which was lost the night McCain won the California primary, I am now liberated to announce that all I care about is hunting down and punishing every Republican who voted for McCain in the primaries. I have a list and am prepared to produce the names of every person who told me he was voting for McCain to the proper authorities.
>
> We'll start with former Arkansas Gov. Mike Huckabee, former New York City mayor Rudy Giuliani, California Gov. Arnold Schwarzenegger and Florida Gov. Charlie Crist. Then we shall march through the states of New Hampshire and South Carolina — states that must never, ever be allowed to hold early Republican primaries again.

Vengeance is Mine, sayeth Coulter!

---

14 Following Romney's defeat in 2012, Coulter praised Romney and blamed everything else.

15 Ann Coulter, "The Reign of Lame Falls Mainly on McCain," 11/5/08.

16 Rejection – the woman scorned – must so enrage Coulter that she becomes incapable of thinking rationally.

Case Study # 7

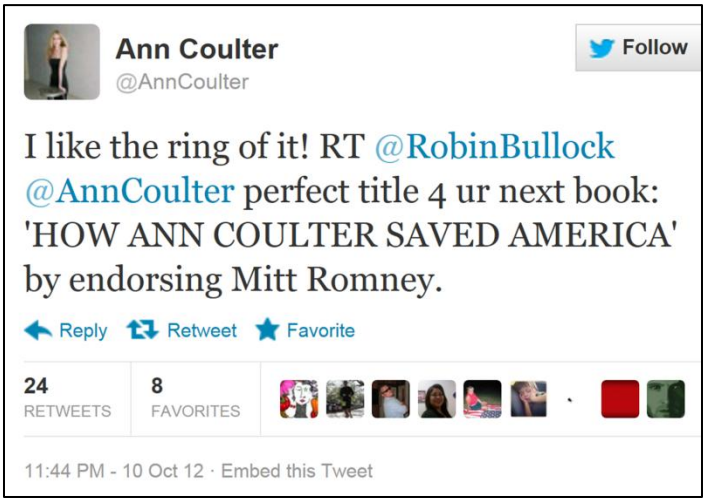
Mitt Romney – Ideal Candidate

"Romney really is the perfect candidate, not only the perfect candidate but the perfect president we need right now." – *Ann Coulter*[1]

[With a self-admitted poor track record for picking winners and losers, Coulter's pride and ego required that she once again anoint the candidate of her choice and orchestrate his path to victory. This case study documents that endeavor. After vacillating between a few candidates, and having already called Romney a losing choice, Coulter nonetheless selected him and proceeded to vilify all of his opponents. Suddenly the candidate who was destined to lose became the perfect, ideal, and most conservative candidate. Only to lose. Thanks, Ann.]

Savior of America

As the acclaimed "goddess of the Conservative Movement," "Wonder Woman of the Conservative Movement," and regarded as the quintessential "Beauty of Conservatism," Coulter sees herself as the very best of "the best and the brightest." The 2012 presidential cycle would once again test Coulter's character (*fail*) and prove Coulter's adeptness at picking winners (*fail*). As she had in previous elections, Coulter chose the low road, using calumny and assassinating the character of people who deserved better.



Oh, and this time, Coulter gave the presidency back to one whose defeat was virtually assured due to his abysmal record, foreign policy debacles, and an economy which refused to cooperate with his statist ideology. (Thank you, Ann!)

In less than a month after thinking of herself as the Savior of America, Coulter succeeded in foisting Obama on Americans for another four years. Since then, Coulter has attempted to redeem herself by bashing everyone else, all the while using those various traits of addictive thinking, such as denial, projection, and rationalization – anything to avoid admitting **her failure**!

President-Maker

Ever since becoming an elf in Santa's workshop in 1997 to rid America of the Clinton presidency, Coulter has regarded herself as a maker and destroyer of presidencies (and other lesser offices). Previous case studies have amply showcased Coulter's attempts, through immoral and deceptive means, to shape presidential (and local) elections since at least the 2000 election cycle. 2012 was to be her *coup-de-grâce*.

[1] Ann Coulter, speech, Rochester, NY, 9/5/12.

On the *Sean Hannity Radio Show*, Coulter said she hosted a Thanksgiving dinner with Rush Limbaugh and Mark Levin as guests. Disdainful of John McCain's candidacy, and looking forward to the 2012 election, Coulter vowed, "I'm not going to let that happen again this time."[2]

Boasting of her power to anoint Romney as president, Coulter said she recently met Romney at a fundraiser: "I went up to him. I was about to leave. But I said – I just wanted to go up to him and tell him, 'You owe me and you better be as right-wing a president as I'm telling everybody you're going to be.'"[3]

During her *Demonic* book tour, Coulter again played president-maker, in the end adoringly supporting Romney and eviscerating all who opposed him.[4] Coulter only has faith in what she has sought her whole life – money and power, fame and success. Romney possesses all these and so, in her mind, he was the most electable.

Presidential Picks

Is Ann Coulter a true believer? What, *really*, are her conservative credentials? Author and columnist Steve Baldwin made a salient observation: "Coulter's views on both the 2008 and 2012 presidential race reveal a blind spot that raises serious questions about her commitment to conservatism."[5]

During the 2000 presidential election cycle, Coulter continuously vilified the motives and the character Sen. John McCain (R-AZ), even accusing him of being bought and paid for by the liberal press. In addition to tarnishing the reputation of an honorable war hero, Coulter accused the head of a pro-life, pro-family organization, Gary Bauer of – of all things – fascism. Why? Because his pro-life advocacy threatened the candidacy of her man, George W. Bush.

During the 2008 presidential cycle, Coulter again besmirched McCain, this time claiming that Sen. Hillary Clinton (D-NY) was more conservative than McCain and that she herself would campaign for Hillary if McCain were the GOP nominee.

Has Ann Coulter Lost Her Mind?

Ann Coulter has been on an anti-Newt rage the past few weeks, and last night on the Kudlow Report, she let slip what she really thinks about the GOP voters who have responded wildly to Newt on everything from the charge of racism by Juan Williams for being for jobs rather than food stamps, to Newt's brilliant rebuttal to Scott Pelley on national security law. She thinks they are morons – or even worse in the world of Coulter, she thinks they're Democrats!

Ann was asked by Kudlow about Newt's invincibility as a debater, and she essentially ridiculed the audiences that have cheered Newt, saying she thought it best to not hear from the so called "peanut gallery."

Is Ann becoming an elitist herself?

And are we seeing the right-wing media elite starting to act and think like the left wing media elite did? That THEY know more than the rest of America as far as what it means to be conservative, and who will best be in a position to beat President Obama.

I mean, why bother going through this whole election thing?!

Rick Tyler, with Newt's PAC, really socked it to Ann for having so little respect for the voters – and the process.

– Greg Hengler, "Has Ann Coulter Lost Her Mind?" Townhall, 1/25/12, http://townhall.com/tipsheet/greghengler/2012/01/25/has_ann_coulter_lost_her_mind.

---

2 Ann Coulter, *Sean Hannity Radio Show*, Premiere Radio Networks, 1/6/12.

3 Ann Coulter, *Sean Hannity Radio Show*, Premiere Radio Networks, 2/2/12.

4 See chapter 10 ("Taking a Demonic Turn"), in my free PDF book, *The Beauty of Conservatism*, available at www.CoulterWatch.com/beauty.pdf.

5 Steve Baldwin, "Ann Coulter and her hero Mitt," *World Net Daily*, 11/23/11, http://www.wnd.com/index.php/index.php?pageId=370837.

Once McCain became the GOP nominee, Coulter started her lackluster website in support of him: Let's Get Drunk and Vote For McCain.

During the 2012 presidential cycle, Coulter again reverted to her now-familiar modus operandi by vilifying her man's chief rivals, particularly former Speaker Newt Gingrich (R-NC). Coulter claimed Gingrich to be the least conservative and least electable GOP candidate. This time, Coulter said she would vote for Rep. Ron Paul (R-TX) – or the Devil – over Gingrich! (But Coulter is the one who calls *other* people "insane.") She also said she'd "vote for" and "support" cannibalistic serial killer Jeffrey Dahmer over Barack Obama.[6]

About Face on Romney

In the space of nine months,[7] Coulter completely reversed positions on Romney, first claiming that **he <u>can't</u> win** ("Well I'll put it this way. If we don't nominate Chris Christie, Romney is going to be the nominee and we'll lose.")[8] and then that **<u>only</u> he can win** ("I think the candidate, it is going to be and is the strongest candidate to beat Obama is Mitt Romney. … I think hands down that is Mitt Romney.").[9] Coulter said that **moderate Republicans always lose** ("Whenever we run a moderate Republican, we lose.")[10] yet, **only a moderate Republican can win** ("The idea that you pick the most right-wing candidate without any concern over who can win is suicidal.").[11] Yes, cognitive dissonance at its worst!

Where are Coulter's core conservative principles and her character and integrity?

"Humiliating Defeat"

Before the 2012 election, Coulter said, "Romney really is the perfect candidate, not only the perfect candidate but the perfect president we need right now."[12]

After the election, despite being recognized as a stunning, shocking and "humiliating defeat" [13] for Romney, and the worst campaign "in the history of the 20th

---

6 Ann Coulter, *Sean Hannity Radio Show*, Premiere Radio Networks, 12/6/11 and Ann Coulter, *Hannity*, FNC, 12/13/11.

7 For a fuller account of Coulter's 2012 presidential election antics, see chapter 10 ("Taking a Demonic Turn"), in my free PDF book, *The Beauty of Conservatism*, available at www.CoulterWatch.com/beauty.pdf.

8 Ann Coulter, CPAC, 2/16/11.

9 Ann Coulter, *Hannity*, FNC, 11/15/11.

10 Ann Coulter, interview, 7/8/08, http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=788GLElNE4c.

11 Ann Coulter, *Hannity*, FNC, 11/15/11.

12 Ann Coulter, speech, Rochester, NY, 9/5/12.

13 Mike Huckabee, "Election Follow-Up 2012," *Focus on the Family*, WAVA, 11/8/12.

century,"[14] Coulter claimed "Romney ran just on his own force of will, a magnificent campaign. I think he was the perfect candidate."[15] But Eric Bolling disagrees: "He certainly wasn't the best candidate."[16]

Coulter called Romney's loss "heart-breaking,"[17] yet, looking forward to the next election, she even thinks Republicans might run Chris Christie in 2016! (*Another* moderate?) Where are Coulter's conservative convictions?

As always, Coulter's initial instinct for self-preservation kicked in as she defended Romney (to defend herself)! Coulter, after all, was the architect of the Romney candidacy, the one who foisted him upon conservatives whether they wanted him or not.

Remember Coulter's vow to never let Republicans pick another loser for a candidate? Despite all of her efforts to orchestrate the election to her choice, Coulter failed abysmally. Coulter picked a loser.

Obama II is the result!

Almost a million *fewer* people voted for Romney in 2012 than voted for McCain in 2008, despite the discovery of the real Obama during the intervening years and despite the disastrous Obama record. This strongly suggests that Romney was *not* the best conservative candidate the GOP had to offer.[18]

In defending Romney, Coulter subtly defended herself. In condemning "conservative purists," she unwittingly condemned herself. Having compromised her own pro-life convictions since at least 2000, Coulter demanded that others compromise their convictions!

Having claimed that Republicans always lose presidential elections when running a moderate candidate, Coulter supported moderate candidates (Mitt Romney, Chris Christie). Being a principled conservative isn't easy for one so used to being unscrupulous.

---

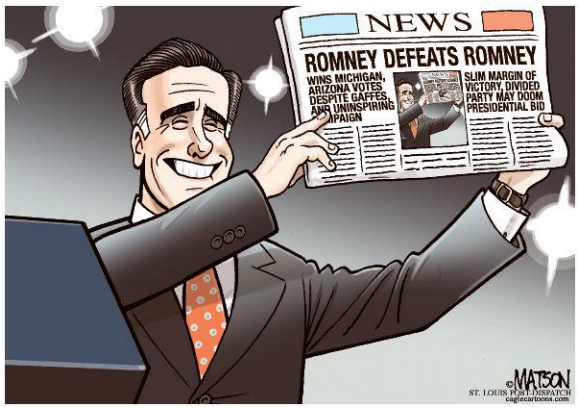
14 Joe diGenova, *Mornings on the Mall*, WBAL, 11/19/12.
15 Ann Coulter, *Laura Ingraham Show*, Talk Radio Network, 11/7/12.
16 Eric Bolling, *The Five*, FNC, 11/23/12.
17 Ann Coulter, *Glenn Beck Show*, 11/08/12.
18 Since Obama's victorious re-election campaign, Eric Bolling has repeatedly said that three million fewer Republicans voted in the 2012 election. Bolling appears to be comparing votes cast for Romney in 2012 with those cast for George W. Bush in the 2004 election, which itself is a telling comparison. For McCain, who was widely regarded as a moderate, to receive more votes than Romney, whom Coulter claims to be strongly conservative, suggests a serious disconnect from reality in Coulter's narrative.

Remember, Romney received far fewer votes in 2012 than McCain did in 2008. Remember, too, that in 2008 Coulter said Hillary Clinton was more conservative than McCain. Remember Coulter's lackluster support for McCain, rallying the troops to "get drunk and vote for McCain." Romney, once again, received *fewer* votes than McCain! This despite Coulter's best efforts to get him both nominated and elected.

Principles matter. Convictions matter. Apparently Romney did not engender sufficient faith in his core principles and commitment to those principles to garner a victory. Coulter's perfect candidate was not so perfect after all.

Three Columns Praising the Candidate Who Lost!

Coulter's post-election columns epitomized denial.[19] In them, she blamed the power of incumbency, the danger of ideological purists (e.g., pro-lifers who really *are* pro-lifers), and demography (the un-bleaching of America). Her third column, suggested Romney critics have "small minds" and are "moron showoffs" "taking insane positions on rape exceptions for abortion."



Condemning the Tea Party, Coulter wrote, "But since the election, many conservatives seem to be coalescing around the explanation for our defeat given by Jenny Beth Martin of the Tea Party Patriots, who said: 'What we got was a weak, moderate candidate handpicked by the Beltway elites and country club establishment wing of the Republican Party. The presidential loss is unequivocally on them.'"

Trying to restore her own credibility and reestablish her own conservative credentials, Coulter called Martin's analysis "preposterous."

[19] Ann Coulter, "Don't Blame Romney," 11/7/12; Ann Coulter, "Demography is Destiny," 11/14/12; Ann Coulter, "Romney Was Not the Problem," 11/21/12.

Mark Levin on Ann Coulter

There are certain campaigns on the Republican side that are absolutely vicious. Now some are more vicious and in your face about it and others are vicious and try to be operating under the radar… the Romney campaign, who has all its surrogates, including some of my friends, who are just vicious.

My dear friend Ann Coulter has gone over the edge. She's putting out what are in essence Romney opposition talking points. Why do we have to destroy Rick Santorum? Can't we just debate these issues? Why do we have to destroy Newt Gingrich? Can't we just debate the issues? … When I was questioning Gingrich's positions, I didn't get that from his people! Even when I questioned Santorum about some of his folks that I don't agree with, I didn't get that from his people either. It comes from one place… and it's going to destroy reputations and careers."

You can be a cheerleader – but be an honest cheerleader. To say that in this field Romney is the most conservative, you've got to be smoking something. You can argue he's electable, he's this, you like his looks, his transformation over the last five or six years… OK, fine. Say what you want. Argue what you want on his behalf. But he's not the most conservative in the field – that's pretty pathetic.

– Conservative Icon Mark Levin Slams the Romney Campaign Over Smears and Falsehoods, *Common Sense*, 2/7/12, http://apapromotions.com/commonsense/2012/02/07/conservative-icon-mark-levin-slams-the-romney-campaign-over-smears-and-falsehoods/.

According to Coulter, Romney presented "a clear contrast with Obama," and actually contends that Romney is *more* Reaganesque than Reagan!

Romney is more Reagan than Reagan? Really?

Coulter's column concluded, "But we're not going to win any elections by telling ourselves fairy tales about a candidate who lost because he wasn't conservative enough, articulate enough or mean enough."

As Red State pointed out, "Reagan wasn't perfect but clearly our late president could recite conservative values and he won the hearts and minds of Americans twice!!!"[20] He concluded, "Leave Reagan out of it ANN not just because he won but because you only sound as weak as a Massachusetts Moderate. Yes, I still see her as just an angry moderate. Will Coulter ever learn?"

The reason Romney had such a lackluster post-Convention campaign is that he didn't have the conservative convictions needed about which to have courage. Since he's not a true believer, he lacks the courage to aggressively pursue the battle, to stake out clear, solid principles, and to clearly and forcefully articulate those beliefs to win the hearts of the people to his cause. Coulter, not being a true believer herself, could not see this.

Counter Coulter

In contrast to Coulter, former Gov. Mike Huckabee cautions conservatives not to compromise or abandon their bedrock biblical and ideological convictions, ones which have stood the test of time and human experience. Rather, Huckabee advocates constructive engagement, a program of championing conservative principles and Christian values. Advocacy for the truth – for what works and what has been proven to work.

In our national (and personal) dialogue, Huckabee suggests, "I think that we have to go back and ask them the questions as we give them the answers and make them think through their own point of view and follow it to its the logical conclusion."[21] Having faith in his views – once again backed up by history and reality – Huckabee encourages us to explain *why* conservatism matters, *why* it is better. Simply put,

---

[20] "Ann Coulter is still wrong about Mitt Romney & Trashing Reagan again," *Red State*, 11/21/12, http://www.redstate.com/seedyrom/2012/11/21/ann-coulter-is-still-wrong-about-mitt-romney-trashing-reagan-again/.

[21] Mike Huckabee, "Election Follow-Up 2012," *Focus on the Family*, WAVA, 11/8/12.

> I've always believed that the really hard-core left cannot live with the logical conclusion of their own views and it's our job not so much to argue with them but to simply, gently lead them through their our views and see where it ends up and ask them the ultimate question: Can you live with where this takes you?

In a direct rebuttal to Coulter, conservative author Steve Baldwin outlined his case for Romney's loss in an essay entitled, "Yes, Romney Was the Problem."[22] According to Baldwin, "Romney IS responsible for wasting a billion dollars carrying out an issue-free campaign full of simple-minded platitudes" and, in this open rebuke to Romney and Coulter, charges, "Romney was one of the worst GOP presidential candidates in modern times." Among Baldwin's many points:

- "He was not the first choice of most conservative voters"
- "Romney was a liberal at heart"
- "Romney's liberal record [as Governor of Massachusetts] on taxes … Cap and Trade … gay marriage, gay rights, quotas, gun control, immigration, etc., was little known outside of Massachusetts because many of America's leading conservatives decided to portray him as someone he wasn't."
- Romney failed to attack "Obama on his unconstitutional action to grant amnesty to two million illegal aliens."
- Romney's non-confrontational approach to debating Obama.
- Romney virtually ignored the "Fast and Furious and Benghazi scandals, both of which involved the deaths of Americans and a subsequent cover-up by this administration."
- "Romney also ignored, for the most part, a whole pattern of Obama cronyism that permeated TARP, the stimulus program, and many government contracts."
- Romney distanced himself from the Tea Party movement and ignored its 2010 victories.
- Romney distanced himself from the Ron Paul movement.
- Romney refused "to even address social issues."
- Romney's 30-year history of flip-flops sowed seeds of doubt among conservatives, libertarians, and Christians.

Baldwin concluded his essay observing, "This election was a turning point in American history … Romney was a liberal Republican pretending to be a conservative and that phoniness was detected by the voters. *So yes, Ms. Coulter, Romney does share much of the blame. And so do you* [emphasis added]."

One commentator observed, "I think it's fair to say that Ann Coulter is not, by the standards of most conservatives, a good ambassador for conservatism in general or the Republican Party itself."[23]

In October, Coulter wanted credit for being the Savior of America by single-handedly anointing Romney as President. Now Coulter shuns the blame for her own disastrous agenda.

---

[22] Steve Baldwin, "Yes, Romney Was the Problem," SteveDeace.com, 11/14/12, http://stevedeace.com/news/national-politics/yes-romney-was-the-problem/.

[23] Steve Skojec, "Ann Coulter and the GOP's Abortion Problem," *The Catholic Vote*, 11/19/12, http://www.catholicvote.org/discuss/index.php?p=38662.

Free Republic Renounces Coulter

Free Republic advertises itself as "the premier online gathering place for independent, grass-roots conservatism on the web" dedicated to "roll back decades of governmental largesse, to root out political fraud and corruption, and to champion causes which further conservatism in America." Beginning in the late 1990s, as it became a formidable force in American politics, its members hailed Coulter as a heroine – perhaps even *the* heroine – in American politics. In recent years, her credibility and cachet among that large segment of activists has drastically fallen. Consider these recent assessments from Free Republic:

> Coulter savagely, unfairly and disingenuously savaged EVERY Republican who ever ran against Romney in the 2008 and 2012 primaries. She did everything she could to nominate her pet northeastern moderate Republican. She also went after McCain in 2008 far worse than Ingraham's ever gone after anyone during an election. Coulter is the most dangerous conservative pundit in America. She makes everyone think she's a real conservative and then she destroys real conservatives when it counts.[24]
>
> I always held an admiration for Coulter's sharp mind, chock full of facts and figures ready to deflate whatever nonsense a liberal is spouting at her. But I've found her arguments in favor of Romney's 'conservatism' consistently unconvincing, to the point of being almost ludicrous. Give a thousand reasons why Romney is preferable to Obama, and I'm right there. But trying to sell Romney and his record as brimming with Reaganesque conservatism is too far-flung. Coulter has lost a ton of credibility with me, these past few years, with her unwavering cheerleading of liberal 'establishment' Republicans, and lukewarm attitude towards the grassroots/Tea Party.[25]
>
> Coulter is, as far as the vastly important issue of morality is concerned, a Chamberlain.[26]
>
> Don't blame Romney. Blame Ann Coulter and the GOP royalty who forced him on us.[27]
>
> If it weren't for ex-conservatives like Ann, we'd have run a candidate that had a chance.[28]

Conservatives attack Coulter over Romney support: Conservative stalwart Ann Coulter isn't getting any props for supporting the establishment — a group calling themselves Citizens for Principled Conservatism has started coulterwatch.com in an attack on the commentator's support for Mitt Romney. "In recent months, Ann Coulter has lied about and vilified conservatives who threaten the candidacy of Mitt Romney, whom she calls the 'most conservative' candidate," the group wrote in a release. "Just this week, she again falsely claimed Romney to be the most conservative, falsely asserted that Sarah Palin is an establishment Republican, and falsely contended that Romney really won in Iowa. Coulter has also dismissed the Tea Party as conspiracy nuts to promote Romney. Coulter gushes over Romney and even defended RomneyCare, now known as CoulterCare!"

---

[24] Post # 58, JediJones, "Ann Coulter, Laura Ingraham debate how Romney lost the election," Free Republic, 11/7/12, http://www.freerepublic.com/focus/f-news/2956552/posts?q=1&;page=51.

[25] Post # 9, greene66, "Coulter Defends Romney," Free Republic, 10/31/12, http://www.freerepublic.com/focus/f-news/2952735/posts.

[26] Post # 7, "What's Good for the Noose is Good for the Pander," Free Republic, 11/14/12, http://www.freerepublic.com/focus/f-news/2959353/posts.

[27] Post # 32, Moonman62, "Don't Blame Romney," Free Republic, 11/8/12, http://www.freerepublic.com/focus/f-news/2956926/posts.

[28] Post # 58, freedomfiter2, "Ann Coulter: Do not underestimate the power of the incumbency," Free Republic, 11/7/12, http://www.freerepublic.com/focus/f-chat/2956694/posts?q=1&;page=51.

Appendices

"I really *like* the bad dreams because you wake up and realize it wasn't true."
– Ann Coulter[1]

1. Coulter Impersonators

Coulter's astonishing success as a provocateur and polemicist has spawned many emulators following her example and a number of impersonators parodying her style. This appendix features one of those impersonators: Kelley Cody-Grimm. Kelley's bio is impressive: "Kelley has been doing improv for over 25 years (Impossible! She must have started when she was ten! Yeah, okay, we'll go with that). She studied theater at Florida State University … has performed with [many] improv groups … In addition to her theater and improv work, Kelley has appeared in the films, *Havana, Gentleman in Black, Thunderboat Row, The Unholy, Another Time, Another Place, Phaedre* and *Stranger Voices*, to name a few. She lives in Duluth, GA with her husband Max and her two children Amber & Daniel."

2. Interview with Katherine Black

Coulter's success as a controversialist, polemicist, and provocateur has inspired (or provoked) the publication of many books about Coulter. Here we feature one author, Katherine Black, whose 2004 book, *Idiocy!*, parodies Coulter's commentary and ideology. Black, a Christian who takes her faith seriously, offers some insightful comments and shares her own political and spiritual journey with us.

3. The Success of the Godly

My sermon, "Success of the Godly," contrasts the world's view of success (it's dangers and pitfalls) with that of God's. It exposes false notions of success so prevalent in today's society and provides a biblical model for success – *true* success! "The Success of the Godly" provides a striking counterpoint to the opening chapters of *Vanity*: Narcissists and other self-absorbed people who seek glory for themselves and even identify themselves as idols of worship (and loving it) are contrasted with godly people giving glory to God and boasting in His glory.

[1] Ann Coulter, MSNBC, 2/9/97.

Appendix 1

Coulter Impersonators

"You should consider that Imitation is the most acceptable part of Worship, and that the Gods had much rather Mankind should Resemble, than Flatter them."
– Marcus Aurelius

Becoming Ann Coulter

Providence College student and blogger Christine Rousselle says, "My dream job is to be Ann Coulter."[1] Any number of people have adopted that very same vision for their lives, but not with the same intent as Rousselle. In fact, some people (male and female) do that as a hobby or a supplemental livelihood – they become Coulter impersonators for fun and/or profit. Amateurs and professionals have portrayed Coulter in plays, musicals, comedies, and YouTube videos. Here we introduce one such impersonator on a mission: Kelley Cody-Grimm.

Kelley's bio is impressive: "Kelley has been doing improv for over 25 years (Impossible! She must have started when she was ten! Yeah, okay, we'll go with that). She studied theater at Florida State University … has performed with [many] improv groups … In addition to her theater and improv work, Kelley has appeared in the films, *Havana, Gentleman in Black, Thunderboat Row, The Unholy, Another Time, Another Place, Phaedre* and *Stranger Voices*, to name a few. She lives in Duluth, GA with her husband Max and her two children Amber & Daniel."

Interview with Kelley Cody-Grimm

Q: You have produced a series of videos parodying Ann Coulter. What prompted your interest in Coulter and what kind of feedback have you received?

A: I first learned about Ann Coulter about four years ago when people kept telling me how much I looked like her. I started to watch clips on YouTube and realized that this woman was a bully or a nut job or both. You don't just pick on 911 widows to sell books, but then she's used the "R" word in reference to developmentally disabled people which really pisses me off since I work at a charity that helps adults with that condition. When I met James Carville and Mary Matalin at a gala that I organized I thought that it would be funny to have Ann reach out to the liberal media, then liberal Hollywood, and eventually political liberals with the help of Hillary Clinton. My real son Daniel plays "Skippy" her über-liberal "adopted" son – a tactic she's using to get George Clooney or Brad Pitt to call her. I've gotten interesting comments on the videos – I've been called a Nazi from both the left and right which leads me to believe that folks just don't understand what it means – she's not that bad, she's just mean.

[1] Buck Sexton, "The Next Ann Coulter? 20-Year-Old Pundit's Blog Exposing Exposing Welfare Abuse is a Hit," *The Blaze*, 12/16/11, http://www.theblaze.com/stories/the-next-ann-coulter-20-year-old-pundits-blog-exposing-welfare-abuse-is-a-hit/.

Kelley has published a blog entry explaining her interest in Coulter,[2] which I have broken up into sections with headings for clarity and ease of reading.

Discovering Coulter

> Up until a few years ago I had no idea who Ann Coulter was. Being a liberal, she simply was not on my radar. But after being either told by total strangers how much I looked like her or being asked if I was her – I decided to do some research. After watching a fair amount of clips on YouTube, I realized that this was a woman who shrieks like a fishwife while dismissing liberals as lower than pond scum. She openly admits that her good looks and short black dresses give her the ability to say things that men just can't say – sexist and racist comments that sometimes go unchallenged by her fellow conservatives because she's easy on the eyes.

Coulter's Attributes

> She has no shame in who her targets are, for instance calling the 9/11 widows harpies who are happy their husbands are dead so they can rival in the notoriety and spend the insurance money. She calls other women ugly and then claims that criticizing a woman for how she looks is the worst form of sexism. She even got confused during an interview in which she was angry at the Canadian government for not sending in troops to Iraq and mentioned how they used to support the United States during the Vietnam War with their army. When the commentator corrected her and said that was not the case and that young men from the U.S. went to Canada to avoid the draft, she was dismissive as if it was impossible for her to even consider being wrong.

> Saying the most shocking things you can think of has worked for the last 20 years, but with this week marking Ann Coulter's 50th birthday, the days of the hot outrageous blond in high heels are starting to tick away faster than her biological clock.

Parodying a Bully

> Make no mistake – Ann Coulter is a bully. Luckily, my way of dealing with bullies is to laugh at them – so I decided a few years ago to use my good looks to mock everything she stands for. From my experience, if you can make a bully look foolish or worse – vulnerable, you rob them of their power. I was also preparing to have my improv group do a live web show and knew that the Internet could be a cold cruel place. I figured that I would test the waters with these spoofs since she is a very polarizing figure. She brings out strong emotions on both sides of the aisle so if I was going to parody her, I needed to get used to some push back.

---

[2] Kelley Cody-Grimm, "Ann Coulter and Me," *A View from a Blonde*, 12/13/11, http://view-from-a-blond.blogspot.com/2011/12/ann-coulter-and-me.html.

First Video and Responses to it

I decided the first video would parody her need to get married (she's been engaged three times but never closed the deal). James Carville (a liberal) and Mary Matalin (a conservative) have had a fairly successful marriage. I had Ann reach out to the liberal media and "Matalin it" since Peter Alexander and Matt Lauer are a lot sexier than Sean Hannity and Rush Limbaugh. I even did a fake book entitled: *Liberal Women: Guiltless, Godless and Big Fat Skank Hos!"* The video ends with Ann's larynx dancing to the song *All the Single Ladies.* The responses have been interesting – either I'm a transvestite, or I'm morbidly obese, or I'm way hotter than Ann, or I have a botched nose job. If the comments are not obscene – I leave them on the YouTube page. It was a good training ground for a full assault with other videos – if I could handle jibes about my weight, I could handle anything.

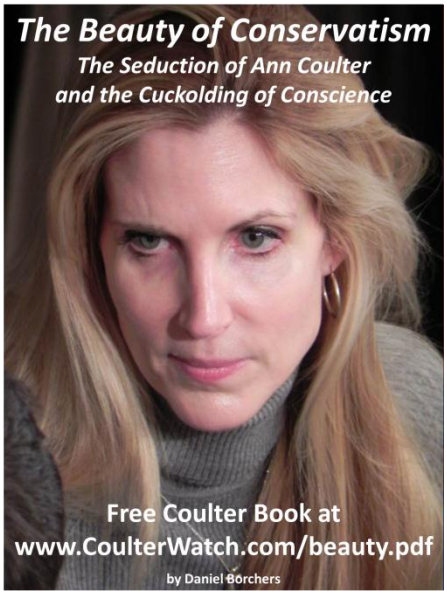
Second Video and Responses to it

The next video featured my son Daniel, as "Skippy" – Ann's "adopted" son, which was Ann's ploy to get the attention of liberal Hollywood, specifically Brad Pitt and George Clooney. As with any premise of comedy in which you are dealing with a character that is arrogant and self-serving, young Skippy always gets the upper hand and steals the show. The reactions to that video included me being called a Nazi by a conservative and a liberal. For the conservative, he felt I was using a child for propaganda which was a page right out of the Third Reich play book. The liberal thought I was the real Ann Coulter and banned me from Canada. I came to the conclusion that those people really don't understand what a Nazi is if you can confuse horrific crimes against humanity with a silly video. It's just a sign of the times I guess to use a word like Nazi whenever you don't agree with someone – it's very Ann Coulter like.

Five Other Videos

I've done about five other Coulter spoofs which have included other guest stars like "Jigsaw," "Samera Morgan," and "Hillary Clinton." The reaction is usually predictable – if you're a liberal, you love them, and if you are a diehard Ann Coulter fan, you hate them. However, not every conservative that I know (yes, gasp – I do have friends who are conservative) agrees with her and they think she's bad for their cause.

The Beauty of Conservatism



One conservative Christian writer named Dan Borchers actually asked me to do a video of Ann on her 50th birthday for the release of his new book – *The Beauty of Conservatism: The Seduction of Ann Coulter and Cuckolding of Conscience*. This latest video is another parody with Ann in her basement celebrating her birthday with her stupid cat named Stupid and a skull named Yorrick reading the unflattering portrait and freaking out. The book is a very good read and makes valid points about how she never takes responsibility for what she says and claims victim status when she created the mess. It makes

you think about how ambition and the thirst for fame can mutate you into a swirling vat of vitriol.

In a parallel universe, I am the nicer, kinder Ann Coulter. The one who has worked in non-profits all her working life and has tried to help people when she can. The one that knows what it's like to love a man through good times and bad and in sickness and in health, to have two children that you adore and who teach you that you are not the center of the universe.

Sure I might have a bitchy sardonic comment to make here and there, but it's usually for someone who deserves it, not for a widow coping with the loss of a husband or a mother grieving over the loss of her son in Iraq. No, I save my barbs for commentators who will say anything to get attention no matter how ridiculous it sounds – like how conservative blacks are so much smarter than liberal blacks, or that if there was a prenatal test for a gay gene, liberals would abort homosexual fetuses because they believe in abortion. I mean, who the hell really says that? Besides the liberal mothers I know would love the fact that they would be the only woman their gay sons would ever love.

Coulter's 50th Birthday Celebration

I guess now that she's hit the big 50 – I feel some compassion for her. In reality, you can trade on your looks for only so long. There will always be someone younger and prettier with bigger boobs who will be ready to take over. Sure, being attractive gets your foot in the door, but if you don't have more to say for yourself other than a tirade of hateful demagoguery eventually people will get tired of you. So far, she's had a good run, but as the years pass she won't be as hot anymore and her rhetoric will become more outrageous just to get attention. Bill O'Reilly will eventually move onto someone younger and more appealing.

My prayer for Ann is that this holiday season, she's visited by the three ghosts of Christmas past, present and future. Maybe when faced with the reality that in the next 20 years she might be reduced to nothing more than the mean women on the corner who yells at the kids for laughing in the street and tells them to get off her lawn, she'll be scared enough to change her ways. Maybe she'll want to help with an Extreme Makeover for a family who is facing hard times. Maybe she'll want to help the 9/11 orphans. Maybe she'll stop smoking and help the American Lung Association – so much good to do and still so much time. The holidays are the time to make mankind your business. While being good and kind might not make her quite as interesting a guest on FOX, it will help her life become more fair and balanced. Oh, and that sound of a short skirt rustling in the background of the O'Reilly Factor – that's Megan McCain. God bless us everyone!

Appendix 2

Interview with Katherine Black

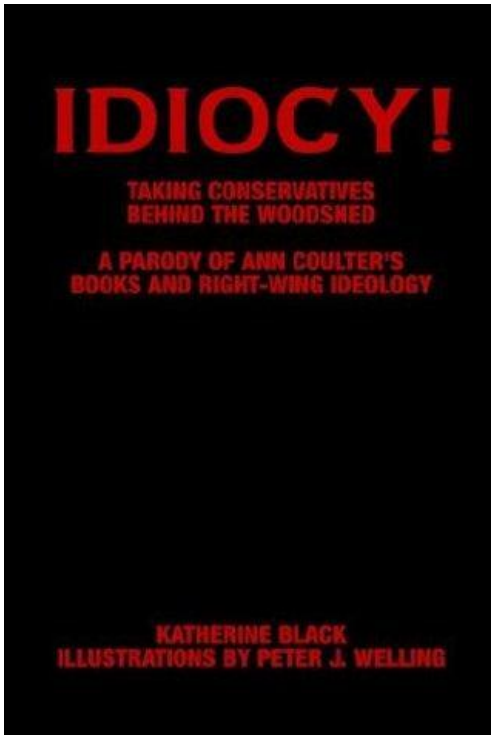
"Extremists like Ann Coulter and Michael Savage are not in control nor do they speak on behalf of genuine Christians." – *Katherine Black*

Books on Ann Coulter

In the past dozen years, a growing number of books have been written *about* Ann Coulter. Katherine Black published her book, *Idiocy!*, in 2004, subtitled "A Parody of Ann Coulter's Books and Right-Wing Ideology."

This interview proved to be an enjoyable process. Katherine Black the person is far different from whom I envisioned the author of *Idiocy!* to be. I guess you can't always judge an author by her book. Ms. Black articulated a comprehensive, commonsensical worldview which incorporates elements from the left and the right and is built upon a solid biblical foundation. She tackled a number of controversial issues in both sensible and sensitive ways. And she exhibited a gracious and compassionate spirit worthy of emulation.

Q: Please encapsulate the thesis of your book and why you wrote it.



KB: *Idiocy!* is primarily a book of political satire for people who prefer to laugh at the idiocy of extreme politicians and media figures instead of ranting like those very same lunatics. "Never trust a man who can't laugh at himself or take a joke." That is something my dad told me. It is ever apparent to me that neo-conservatives like Ann Coulter are labeling folks as blasphemous heretics if they voice a dissenting opinion of any kind on any subject. If you require truth, honor and accountability from our current administration, then you are apparently a traitorous heathen and, worse yet, a liberal … the foulest and most loathsome, debased creature in league with Satan. Simply put, I could not take it any longer. What intelligent Christian could?

Sometimes people feel called to do things they never dreamed they could. Writing a book is one of those things. Fortunately, I happen to have a wonderful writing partner who supplies imaginative ideas and inspired writing. He and I do not see eye to eye on religion or politics, but we collaborate quite well by respecting each other. We temper each other and balance each other. He is much more politically and religiously liberal than I am. I tend to be more esoteric and eccentric, and he tends to be a bit of a head banging wild man. We make it work. Now if the Democrats and Republicans could learn to do the same, America could probably get somewhere.

Q: The tone, style and substance of your interview answers differ strikingly from your book. Please describe your creative process of getting into character for your parody.

KB: The creative process involves a collaborative effort with my writing partner, Mr. F.W. Contini, who resides in the Pacific Northwest and prefers not to be involved with interviews. We are from different sides of the country, cultural heritages, religious beliefs, political ideologies and educational backgrounds. We temper each other, and the tone and content of the book reflects that.

Q: Sorry for the delay in getting back to you. I've been hesitant to follow-up on your last answer because I fear it may be taken the wrong way. As one Christian to another, I trust that you will discern my sincerity. So, here it is: Could you expand on your last answer? What would you say to those who might suggest that you are emulating rather than lampooning Coulter?

KB: A question asked in good faith should never be feared. Neither should the answer. Good luck with your book! Someone once asked me a similar question: if I thought Ann Coulter is really just poking fun at liberals, that she really does not mean any of it to be serious – is she just engaging in parody? I have never seen anything about her to suggest it could be even remotely possible. If she is trying to be funny, she is failing miserably because neither side of the aisle is laughing. Emulating Coulter? If I emulated Coulter, I would be calling for her head on a platter or better yet on a pike in front of the Capitol Building. I would demand zero political and religious tolerance, requiring everyone to follow the Administration without question. I would vote for a constitutional amendment to repeal the freedom of speech or perhaps amending it to exclude political and religious freedom of speech. I would lobby the FCC to revoke any mass media license held by a liberal, and I would personally nuke Hollywood.

[Coulter's] modus operandi is to hurl personal insults and name call rather than to engage in meaningful, thoughtful or respectful conversations or debates. To lampoon [her], all you have to do is shine a very bright spotlight on [her]. Since [she] get[s] more airtime than God does, there is plenty to bring to light. What is it about her that I supposedly emulate? Nothing.

Q: As a born-again Christian who is moderate, how do you view the spectrum of political and religious beliefs within the body of Christ and where do your beliefs fall within that spectrum?

KB: "Unity through diversity" – I learned that phrase while working in an association office of the United Church of Christ some years ago. What an inspiring job, being surrounded by devoted Christians, lay and clergy alike, and knowing your work is furthering God's kingdom! I grew so much as a Christian during that period, and "unity through diversity" expresses my belief about the body of Christ. We are one in the bonds of love and service, yet God created each of us as a unique person with unique gifts. He did not design us alike, and I think people overlay their own human need to conform when they assert false doctrines claiming we should all be and think and believe just one way. Would the God that formed about a zillion different species of roaches really fashion us, who are supposed to be his greatest creation, like mass produced Yugos? I think not.

I have attended a plethora of denominations and independent churches during my life – Wesleyan, Methodist, Baptist, UCC, Church of Christ, and several independents. Consequently, I do not possess a fervent denominational identity, preferring instead to consider myself a Christian who is a member of a Baptist congregation at present. Before the Protestant Reformation, if you asked the average European to

describe himself, he might tell you from what town or country he hailed, but he would begin by proclaiming himself a Christian. People did not regard themselves as Catholics or Baptists or Methodists – they were Christians. Only after that 16th century divergence in doctrine did people identify themselves by different belief structures. They lost the emphasis on Christ when they lost the name of Christ. We have never recovered our sense of oneness. Nevertheless, here's what I do believe … I believe in God, that Jesus Christ is his son and my savior, that the Holy Spirit endows us with the means to experience the touch of God through grace and inspiration, but I am willing to accept the diverse names (Yahweh, Abba, Adonai, etc.) people have for God. I am willing to accept that others use inclusive gender language when referring to God as the Creator instead of God the Father. When I admire a tiger lily, I think God must be a woman. When I remember giving birth, I know God must be a man. Then I remember that God created both male and female. Now what does that tell you?

I believe in baptism, but I am willing to accept the diverse way in which different churches practice that with everything from sprinkling and baby baptisms to full immersion in the "crick in the holler" in the middle of winter. My baptism was by immersion in a Baptist church that was so wealthy, they heated and softened the water in the baptismal with Calgon. God, take me away! I believe in the sacrament of communion, but I am willing to accept the diverse way in which churches practice that too. Some use grape juice and Aunt Judy's fresh baked bread. Some use wine and little wafers, both of which I personally cannot stand. The wine is more like vinegar, and the wafers are closer to college-ruled notebook paper. Those wafers always stick to the roof of my mouth. I draw the line at transubstantiation, which is a Catholic dogma whereby the elements of communion become the body and blood of Christ while keeping only the appearances of bread and wine. Way too creepy and gross for me! But hey, go for it!

I believe in the sacrament of marriage, that it is a sacred and natural state for man and woman. I do not entertain any private, personal thoughts of diversity here. The Bible specifies marriage as between one man and one woman – period. It also declares that homosexuality is an anathema to God. That is a VERY strong word – anathema. According to Webster's anathema is a "ban or curse pronounced with religious solemnity by ecclesiastical authority, and accompanied by excommunication." In legal dictionaries it is "a punishment by which a person is separated from the body of the church, and forbidden all intercourse with the faithful: it differs from excommunication, which simply forbids the person excommunicated from going into the church and communicating with the faithful. Gal. 1. 8, 9." Like I said, a VERY strong word.

The issue of homosexuality and same-sex marriage spans the gulf between religion and politics and is so very volatile we could fulfill the electricity requirements of every nation on earth if we could bottle the energy we pour into our beliefs, both religious and political. We hear so much from both extremes that the din is quite overpowering to those of us in the middle. One extreme says kill all the homosexuals, put them in prison, brainwash them, take a lesson from India and create our own untouchable class, shoot them into outer space never to be seen or heard from again – just get rid of them. The other extreme says whatever feels good do it, the wants of the one always outweigh the needs of the whole, homosexuality is natural, we need more gays on TV, we need books in elementary schools with titles like Daddy, Why Is There A Man In Your Bed? or Are You My Two Mothers?

It is not surprising to me the extremists cannot stand each other. They are both vying for the same space. The far left wing and far right wing have gone so far that they have actually come back around full circle and met! No wonder they hate each other with such fervor and venom. There is not enough room for them to coexist in that tiny space surrounded by the rest of us who range anywhere from garden variety liberal to every day conservative! They strive to exist in direct opposition to the scientific principle that two bodies cannot occupy the same space at the same time. That would make me cranky, too, I guess.

So what do I believe? I believe we should love God and our neighbors as ourselves just as He commanded. The Bible says homosexuality is wrong, but it does not say to go out and persecute them. Vengeance belongs to God alone. Passing judgment belongs to God alone. We are to be a living example of the ideal of Jesus. That means praying for people who have chosen a lifestyle we believe is wrong. That means engaging in conversations with all humility and compassion when the opportunity arises to share our faith. That means the iron maidens and the racks and the guillotines must keep gathering dust.

Yes, Jesus did powerful things, and God destroyed Sodom and Gomorrah. However, that does not give a few puny humans the right, privilege or moral imperative to raze the entire earth and bend people to their one way. We are only humans, a bit of dust, a flutter of a moth wing in the grand scheme of God's creation, and I do not remember God ever asking us for help. He wants our true, grateful, heartfelt, joyful everlasting worship, and I am going to keep offering praise every day with my every breath and thought. I might stumble, but I know how to get back up and keep going. That is something we Americans are good at – recovering and overcoming.

Moreover, that strength is derived from the Christian principles of those people who founded this country, the very same principles still present in moderates like me. I truly believe the vast majority of Americans are moderates, both spiritually and politically. We love winning but not if we have to cheat or beat someone down to do so. We love laughter, especially when we laugh at ourselves. We love freedom but not at the cost of oppression. We love the truth but not if it is leaked to the press. We love our country but not when our leaders do shameful things.

We are tired of listening to all the neo-conservatives and ultra-liberals screaming their own respective brands of fascism on Fox and Clear Channel and MSN in such rude and ridiculous manners that you cannot make out what any silly one of them is saying. By the way, they are ALL wrong, and that is the reason I watch old movies on TV and listen to my local contemporary Christian music radio station. We are tired of seeing yet another mindless "reality" show parading across the screen in living, promiscuous, lascivious, debauchery. Can anyone answer the following question? If Rupert Murdoch is so very conservative, why does he create and air so many of these vapid shows on his TV and radio channels? Isn't he ashamed he is making money from and encouraging sinful, exploitive and hateful behavior? Why doesn't he just go all the way with something like Queer Eye vs. Straight Plan – Rumble in the Closet? Or maybe combining Fear Factor with The Bachelor – one guy having to choose from 12 angry divorcees? Call me up, Rupe, and we'll do lunch!

We are tired of lying, injudicious presidents regardless of their party affiliation. I guess it just does not register with Bush that the last eight guys (except for Carter, a decent man, and Ford, a jovial jock) sitting in that oval office were nailed for doing something obtuse and just plain underhanded and terrible, including his own father! Let's see … Marilyn Monroe and the Bay of Pigs, Vietnam & Cambodia, Watergate, Iran-Contra, Clarence Thomas and Iraq, sexual addiction. Eventually, they all get busted! Duh!!! When the Bible says the sins of the father will be visited on the sons, I think about Big Bush leaving that mess in Iraq that has now sucked in Baby Bush with the fury of a Texas twister. We moderates might be tired of all these things, but I for one will not give in to extremists just because they are louder or they get more air time. I have hope and faith that they cannot squelch because it comes from God.

Q: How do the goals, techniques and impact of the extreme left compare with those of the extreme right?

KB: Over the centuries since the wondrous miracles of Christ, politicians and leaders have been performing all sorts of heinous acts against their fellow man all in Jesus' name! I have always been baffled by that. The Prince of Peace told you to send Europe's children to their deaths in a crusade? The

Son of God told you to raze entire towns, to trap Jews in their homes and burn them alive? The Heavenly Father told you there was only one pope in Rome but then changed His mind and said Avignon was the true seat? And that was just by the Middle Ages! We have racked up all sorts of frequent sinner miles since then.

As I have said before, I think there is very little difference between extreme left and extreme right. Both are beyond reason. Both dispense with any semblance of upholding personal or even corporate freedoms by demanding conformity. Both seem to think the ends justify the means of violence, intimidation, criminal activity, suborning perjury, falsification of documents, withholding and/or fabricating evidence and whatever other little nasties they think will get them what they want. Oh, but I forgot yet again! That is what we are supposed to be fighting in Iraq.

What is truly sad is that extremists either do not realize what they are doing or, worse yet, they do. Maybe they read Machiavelli's The Prince too many times and started to believe it is a manual for political success. Maybe they read Plato's Republic too many times and started to believe the natural political progression from aristocracy to timocracy to oligarchy to democracy and last to tyranny. I guess they think we are ready to degenerate from democracy to tyranny.

How fortunate for them to be in power at just the right time! Oh, but I forgot a third time! God planned it just that way. When you cannot justify your own actions through logic, morals, ethics or the standards of civilized society, say God wants it that way or God does not exist, depending on which side of the extreme you call home. When the entire world calls you on the carpet for outrageous behavior, claim they are persecuting you because you are a believer or because you are not. Do anything, say anything except step up to the microphone and claim responsibility for your own twisted goals and hidden agendas.

In the end, that's all the American public really wants – a leader they can trust and respect, a leader who puts their needs ahead of his own, a leader who takes responsibility for his actions. We do not want someone who is perfect. We have Christ, and we know perfection does not exist anywhere else. But do politicians and media figures all have to be so darn lousy? Heaven forbid we actually see a little honor and dignity! I just keep reminding myself altruism has no place in politics or mass media, the very places that need it the most, and I will have to keep voting for the lesser of two evils until the Second Coming.
Jews, Christians and Muslims

Q: Would you agree with a friend of mine that the far right is far, far more dangerous and hateful than the far left?

KB: No, I do not agree with your friend. Both are equally dangerous and hateful at the same time. Let's take a look at the dangers and hatefulness of both sides in just one area – the environment: Right: Let's exploit every natural resource we have for corporate gain and for instant gratification of current stockholders' greed. Why should we worry about the coming generations having air or water or food because we have dumped waste in every ounce of potable water and strip mined every inch of arable land? Why should we worry that coming generations will be overwhelmed by toxins in the environment? We won't be around to suffer, and our progeny will be so stinking rich they can move to another planet and start the fun all over again! Left: Let's do away with fossil fuels and anything that uses them for power. Let's do away with nuclear power too. Remember to get rid of all petroleum products, all plastics and synthetic fabrics, all air conditioning, paints, pesticides, dyes and food additives. We can't forget fur, any products made from animals or parts of animals, all meat, fish and dairy foods. Why should we worry that the coming generations might need some medical aid or power source to keep their butts from freezing and frying? Why should we worry that the coming generations will be eating only the seeds and fruits that they can gather themselves out in the fields because they don't have refrigeration? Living like that, the world's population will fall within our projections, the hearty will survive, all the others will die

of starvation and exposure. Then the earth will be clean once again! Anything taken to extreme is dangerous and hateful. The further you stray from the foundational truths (which I believe reside in the middle), the more twisted, tangled, snarled, and mangled the vision becomes. In the extreme ends of the spectrum, that vision is warped beyond recognition, and the residents thereof are blind to those truths.

Q: What do you consider the defining moment of your generation and what event or experience has most shaped your life?

KB: I was born the youngest of five daughters on the tail end of the Baby Boomers (Late Boomers, if I may coin a phrase) … a final hurrah by my parents, you might say. I was born into an era of sex, drugs and rock n' roll, of war and strife, of social and political upheaval and polarization, of vast technological advances and accomplishments, of chaos, enmity, and spiritual enlightenment, of American Bandstand and Soul Train, of Psst and Dippity-Do. They say the human eye can distinguish 7 million colors, but I envy my parents' black and white view of the world. It is so clean and simple when compared to the world in which I have matured. Their generation would never have come up with Formula 409 or Teflon because they never would have conceived of the need for those things in their clean and simple world.

It is next to impossible to choose a defining moment considering everything that has happened from 1960 to the present – man's first walk on the moon, the assassinations of two Kennedys, MLK Jr. and Malcolm X, The Civil Rights Act, Roe v. Wade, ad infinitum. Nevertheless, if I must choose one moment of all the events in American history that has defined my generation, I think Watergate is the nexus. Everything in our nation converged in a serious attempt at implosion during the period from the June 1972 break-in to the pardon of Nixon in September 1974.

Just like every other kid in America, I learned about my country at school. The textbooks built a picture of America as solid and strong as The Queen Mary. I really should have paid more attention to the caption – "Here sails The Titanic." What was once a sacrosanct, golden, heroic leader called the President had suddenly become a tarnished, base metal felon. My beautiful fantasy of pristine democracy and freedom was dirtied and grimy. Someone had left my cake out in the rain, and I did not think I could take it! I distinctly remember being a teenager during that period and wondering if the world was even going to exist by the time I became an adult. Was I ever going to get the chance to be a grown up with a career and family of my own? Was I ever going to get the chance to vote according to my convictions to change this country? Who cares if there will be Social Security when I am 65 – was I ever going to find out just what they meant by "the sexual revolution"? Or were the leaders of the world actually going to end the world in a conflagration of nuclear and social meltdown?

Oh, how I disliked and mistrusted politicians and still do to this day! We Late Boomers are a sarcastic and cynical lot, given to extremes in everything because we were born into an era of extremes. We all dislike and mistrust politicians and can trace it back to that one time. However, what happens to each of us individually has a much more profound effect on our day-to-day life than an event like Watergate. I would say that profound, life-changing moment happened for me only a few years ago, and it happened in church.

I am a born again Christian, a Baptist, a child of God, a daughter of the King. However you look at me and however you describe me, I am a Christian. I was baptized when I was 21, and I have always believed in God. For a large number of Christians, that is as far as it ever goes for them – a superficial attachment to the Church, a vague Sunday-only notion of Christianity, going thru the motions out of sheer habit. I am not one of those Christians.

Neither am I an extremist cut from the same Grand Inquisitor fabric as someone like Pat Robertson, nor am I a public Christian, prone to spouting scripture in perfect Pavlovian response at the mere mention of

The Bible. Any fool can quote the Bible. Any speechwriter can make a politician sound like a devout Christian. The real question is does the fool know what he is saying? Does the politician live and breathe his faith?

In America's current extreme, neo-conservative, quasi-Christian media circus, it is ironic to me that my faith in God has restored my faith in the future of the world. Scream and holler as they might, whine and cajole as they may, extremists like Ann Coulter and Michael Savage are not in control nor do they speak on behalf of genuine Christians. He is like a little yippy dog that barks at every noise, and she's like a hungry chick that screeches continually for sustenance. Babies learn very quickly that they get attention when they cry. Ann and Michael are babies in that respect.

It has gone far enough. That is why I wrote *Idiocy*! I have had more than enough of their haranguing, hellfire lava flow of ridiculousness. Moreover, I believe the majority of Americans are like me. We believe in moderation, fairness, freedom and integrity. We believe in the basic right of every American to make fun of everyone else. We believe God has a sense of humor, even if everyone IS afraid to laugh.

Believe me, there are millions and millions of us out here. All we have to do is stop listening to extremists, stop watching their shows, stop buying their books, stop allowing them to hijack every radio station and publication in this country. Cut off the head and the body will die, folks! Register and actually vote. Read the Bible, the Torah, and the Koran for yourself. Do not take someone else's word for it. Do not abdicate your basic freedoms in favor of blind apathy. Frankly, I do not want to be standing anywhere near Ann Coulter on Judgment Day. I wonder how she is going to explain all the hateful, vicious and evil things she has said in His name. How are the extremists like her going to answer when God asks them to give an accounting of their lives? I would not want to have to explain how I could have possibly thought waging war, lying, cheating and misrepresenting facts was what Jesus would do.

There is one thing I would gladly answer for: throwing these fascist jerks out of the spotlight like Jesus did in throwing moneychangers out of the temple. Until that day comes, I will ridicule and lampoon Ann Coulter and those like her in print. And I will remember that God is in control.

Appendix 3

The Success of the Godly

"I'm on the edge of glory, and I'm hanging on a moment of truth." – *Lady Gaga*

The World's View of Success

Today's sermon is a continuation of my sermon series on godliness. The first addressed the beauty of godliness and the second the wisdom of godliness.[1] Today we will look at the nature and the reality of true success and see its connection with our larger theme: godliness.

What is success? How do we achieve it? What are the keys to success? Today we will look at success from a human perspective and from a biblical one.

A bumper sticker on a flashy corvette – NOT POOR – seems to denote the aspirations of so many in the world today. The self-identity of the driver of this expensive sports car is all tied up in his possessions, his wealth, his prestige, his glory.

The so-called 99 percenters rail against the so-called one-percenters because they themselves are NOT RICH. Class warfare still exists and remains so effective as a political strategy precisely because people want to be better off than they are and are prone to envy those who have what they don't. Conversely, while working for wealth (and keeping the wealth one has earned) is not wrong in and of itself, often the pursuit and acquisition of wealth can create wrong, immoral, and self-destructive attitudes in both the pursuer and acquirer.

Ever since the fine arts and performing arts were first created in ancient times, mankind has been predisposed to write poetry, music, plays, and the like focusing on money. "If I Were a Rich Man" and any number of songs with "Money" in the title or lyrics attest to man's desire for wealth. Power and prestige are similarly sought for their own sake. The Tears for Fears' song, "Everybody Wants to Rule the World," romanticizes man's natural desire to have control of not only their own lives, but their environment, and even control over other human beings.

People derive meaning from their possessions, position, power, and prestige. Often their very self-identity is wrapped up in one or more of those Ps. Our meaning in life is frequently found in our work, our relationships, and our accomplishments. But how do those things actually relate to true success?

---

[1] See Appendix 2 ("The Beauty of Godliness") and Appendix 3 ("The Wisdom of Godliness") in my free PDF book, *The Beauty of Conservatism*, which is available for download at www.CoulterWatch.com/beauty.pdf.

Famous Quotes

World renowned author and activist Helen Keller said, "Many persons have the wrong idea of what constitutes happiness. It is not attained through self-gratification but through fidelity to a worthy purpose." Notice, however, that the definition of "worthy purpose" is problematic. Moreover, those purposes could be either self-motivated or other-motivated and may actually speak little to the heart of the person involved.

British statesman Winston Churchill regarded endurance and an irrepressible spirit as essential qualities for success: "Success is walking from failure to failure with no loss of enthusiasm." But many people have varying enthusiasms for myriad things. American statesman and patriot Benjamin Franklin added, "Without continual growth and progress, such words as improvement, achievement, and success have no meaning." One should note, though, that "growth" and "progress" can be both subjective and objective terms. Internal growth may not necessarily be outwardly observed except over a period of time which itself can be subjective.

Author and essayist William Safire cautioned, "The right to do something does not mean that doing it is right." Here discernment and wisdom are essential for a "successful" outcome. The brilliant physicist Albert Einstein similarly encouraged, "Try not to become a man of success but rather try to become a man of value." But how do we quantify "value?" What are the parameters of a "man of value?" By what measure do we determine when a person has "value?"[2]

Actress and comedian Ellen DeGeneres surprisingly spoke about success in a frank manner, exhibiting emotional growth and spiritual maturity with her 2009 commencement address at Tulane University:

> When I was younger I thought success was something different. I thought, "When I grow up, I want to be famous. I want to be a star. I want to be in movies. When I grow up I want to see the world, drive nice cars. I want to have groupies." But my idea of success is different today. For me, the most important thing in your life is to live your life with integrity and not to give into peer pressure, to try to be something that you're not. To live your life as an honest and compassionate person. To contribute in some way.

We see that not only do we all have differing views of what constitutes success, but our views can change over time and due to the circumstances of our lives. The world has its own varied views of success as I'm sure do most people in this room. But consider that how we view things and how God views things is often markedly different.

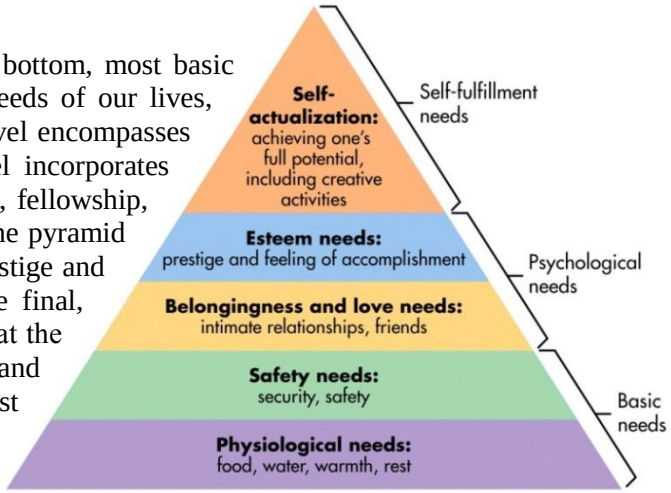
Maslow's Pyramid

Most of you have probably heard of Maslow's Hierarchy of Needs. It is a well-known model used in business and both professional and personal endeavors. Those who are interested in the model can easily find more information about it on the Internet or at their local library.

---

[2] As noted in previous sermons, America's Founding Fathers recognized that all men have inherent worth because all men are created in God's image and, consequently, have certain inalienable rights has mentioned in the Declaration of Independence and enshrined in the Bill of Rights. "Value" in the context of this sermon and these selected quotes concern what we, as human beings created in the image of God, actually do with the lives, gifts, talents, and opportunities which God provides each of us. Do we live for ourselves, for others, or for God. Do we squander our *resources* in the pursuit of pleasure and self-satisfaction, or do we perhaps go to the other extreme and squander our *relationships* in pursuit of success.

According to the Pyramid, we all start out at the bottom, most basic level, seeking to fulfill the most basic *physical* needs of our lives, such as food, water, warmth, and rest. The next level encompasses our needs for *safety and security*. The third level incorporates *emotional and relational* needs, such as friendship, fellowship, sense of belonging and love. The fourth level up the pyramid deals directly with the ego – *self-esteem* needs: prestige and a sense of accomplishment (earned rewards). The final, topmost level, is called "*self-actualization*." Being at the pinnacle stresses what the designer of the pyramid and the proponents of the pyramid regard as most important in life: "*achieving one's full potential*, including creative activities."



The aspirational slogan, "Be all you can be," reflects a significant strand of societal aspirations today, but fails to define the terms employed. "Be" could be anything, a sentiment equally conveyed by "all." But is "Be all" the end all of life? Or is there something more to life? Something not reflected in the concrete, formulaic, physical practicalities of life? What if the best you that you can be is not at the pinnacle of the pyramid? What if settling for less (in the eyes of others) is fulfilling the heart of who you were meant to be?

Notice that the Hierarchy itself is *centered* in *self*. Self is at the very *heart* of the model. We see Maslow's Hierarchy of Needs is *self*-directed and *self*-focused, and many of those pursuing the pinnacle of a *self*-fulfilled life are pursuing their own glory. In contrast, human beings were actually created to give glory to God. To that end, we are to be God-directed and God-fulfilled.

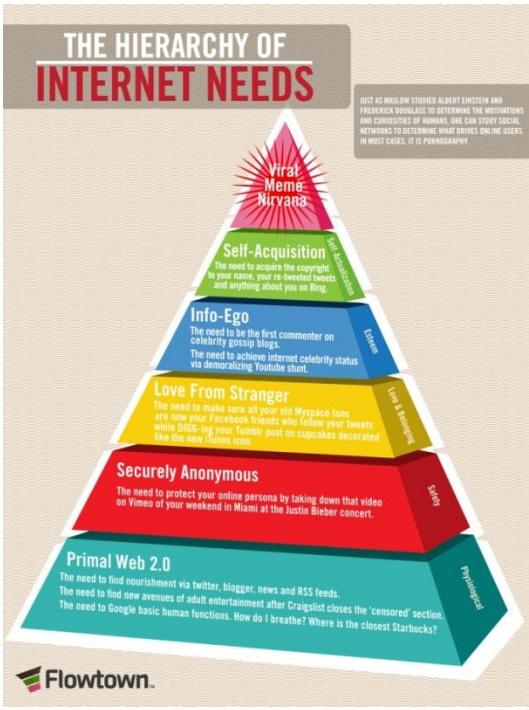
In contrast to this popular self-improvement model, Christians don't define themselves or their success based on a pyramid or on a set of hierarchical functions. We see ourselves in relationship to the cross and the empty tomb, in relationship to the One who died and rose again. Jesus is both our measure and our fulfillment.

The Pyramid itself has been adapted and modified for leadership training, educational learning models, and self-help seminars to fit corporate structures, small businesses, non-profit organizations, health care organizations, and very specific local groups. Some variants of the Pyramid are humorously done, such as the one related to robots on this page. This satire pokes fun at mankind's seemingly insatiable drive to not only keep up with the Joneses but to be *better* than them, a drive which when left unchecked could produce comic, even destructive, results.

An interesting point which can be drawn from this satire is that the robots eventually sought to kill people, something which had never before been considered. Similarly, many success-driven people lose sight of their core principles and violate their integrity – the integrity of who they were – to become something they somehow perceive as better but which is not inconsonance with their inner being.

A couple of additional pyramid creations are worthy of examination (you can do that on your own). Both are Internet-related and both deal with the *relational* aspects of the Internet. It appears that almost everything in our society is geared toward boosting the ego and promoting one's self. Going *viral*, in today's world, is a good thing – a means to achieving nirvana.

Glory, like power, has a way of corrupting one's heart and soul, and, as we have seen, short circuit (or sear) one's conscience. Glory is frequently misunderstood and misapprehended. Indeed, the wrong kind of glory is, well, inglorious.



Self-Glory

Self-exaltation is the name of the game in the world in which we live. Self-promotion is at the center of so much of what our society seeks and cherishes. Ironically, self-glory is anathema to what you and I really need and to all that we may hope to achieve.

Jesus differentiated between those seeking self-glory and those giving glory to God. "He who speaks from himself seeks his own glory," Jesus warned, "but He who seeks the glory of the One who sent Him is true, and no unrighteousness is in Him" (Jn. 7:18). Those who give glory and honor to God are the ones who are "true" and righteous. And, in turn, God gives them honor: "How can you believe, who receive honor from one another, and do not seek the honor that comes from the only God?" (Jn. 5:44).

The psalmist exulted God, writing, "In God is my salvation and my glory; the rock of my strength, and my refuge, is in God" (Ps. 62:7). How can we go wrong trusting in the God who is and who provides our salvation. Yet, many people seek other means of salvation and of success.

Glory in God

In his treatise on *Ethics*, Dietrich Bonhoeffer observed: "In a world where success is the measure and justification of all things the figure of Him who was sentenced and crucified remains a stranger and is at best the object of pity. The world will allow itself to be subdued only by success."[3]

Those words well describe the society in which we live at the beginning of the third millennium. We should not be surprised, human nature being what it is – a constant. People look to themselves and create their own standards of success into which they fit their lives. Consequently, people tend not to look to their Creator, their Savior, for the parameters and goals of their lives. Jesus is a stranger to them; meanwhile, they are seeking fulfillment, like love, in all the wrong places.

Bonhoeffer continued, "It is not ideas or opinions which decide, but deeds. Success alone justifies wrongs done. … With a frankness and off-handedness which no other earthly power could permit itself, history appeals in its own cause to the dictum that the end justifies the means." Yes, brethren, the socialist credo

[3] Eric Metaxas, *Bonheoffer: Pastor, Prophet, Martyr, Spy*, Thomas Nelson, 2010, pg. 366.

– "the end justifies the means" – is not limited to that particular ideological impulse and has been in existence since the Fall of man. Rather, using whatever human measure one defines success, almost anyone can be tempted by that credo. Every religion, every philosophy, every ideology has some members who will justify any means to achieve their ends. It is in looking upward and not outward or inward that we can obtain the true measure of success.

In the end, Bonhoeffer concluded, "The figure of the Crucified invalidates all thought which takes success for its standard." Human success, human achievement, will always fall short. True success is attained only by a living relationship with, as Bonhoeffer put it, "Him who was sentenced and crucified." To the world, He remains a stranger, but to those who place their faith in Him, He is nothing short of Success!

The apostle Paul wrote, "Therefore I glory in Christ Jesus in my service to God" (Rom. 15:17, NIV). Paul understood the source of his success and the One who deserves the glory. Paul did not seek the praises of men or the elevation of himself, but rather declared, "But God forbid that I should boast except in the cross of our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom the world has been crucified to me, and I to the world" (Gal. 6:14).

God revealed His glory to the prophet Jeremiah who captured the heavenly perspective on this matter:

> Thus says the LORD: "Let not the wise man glory in his wisdom, let not the mighty man glory in his might, nor let the rich man glory in his riches; but let him who glories glory in this, that he understands and knows Me, that I am the LORD, exercising loving-kindness, judgment, and righteousness in the earth. For in these I delight," says the LORD (Jer. 9:23-24).

True success is only found in a transformational relationship (understanding, knowing, and sharing) with the only One who is worthy of glory.[4]

Biblical Model of Success

In a letter counseling a young pastor named Timothy, Paul advised that "godliness with contentment is great gain" (1st Tim. 6:6), echoing King Solomon's insight on the vanity of life and the futility of pursuing

[4] Evangelist and biblical scholar John MacArthur has written much about God's holiness and glory (see *Worship: The Ultimate Priority*, Moody, 2012). MacArthur has also written a series of books fleshing out how God reveals His glory in and through people whom He has called down through the ages (see *Twelve Ordinary Men: How the Master Shaped His Disciples For Greatness, and What He Wants to Do With You*, Thomas Nelson, 2002; *Twelve Extraordinary Women: How God Shaped Women of The Bible, and What He Wants to Do With You*, Thomas Nelson, 2005; and *Twelve Unlikely Heroes: How God Commissioned Unexpected People in the Bible, and What He Wants to Do With You*, Thomas Nelson, 2012).

riches. Paul continued, "For we brought nothing into this world, and it is certain we can carry nothing out. And having food and clothing, with these we shall be content" (1st Tim. 6:7-8).[5]

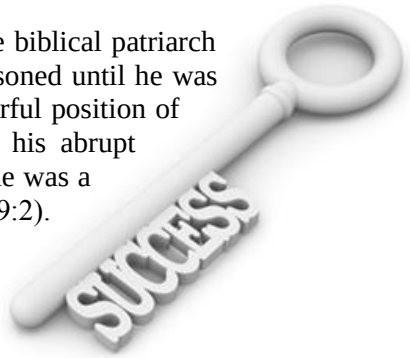
Jesus cautioned His disciples, "How hard it is for those who have riches to enter the kingdom of God!" (Mk 10:23). Those who trust in themselves or their riches do indeed have a hard time yielding to God and relying on Him. Choosing between the two becomes almost impossible for them and God will never accept second place.

Paul described those fixated on themselves and this world rather than living godly lives: "they glory in their shame, with minds set on earthly things" (Phil. 3:19). Yes, self-glory – being puffed up with one's possessions, power, and prestige – is shameful, but still people "glory in their shame."

Solomon, the Preacher, wrote "wisdom brings success" (Eccl. 10:10). That success becomes a self-evident truth is noted in the Gospel of Matthew: "Wisdom is vindicated by her deeds" (Mt. 11:19). Solomon advised, "He who walks with integrity walks securely, but he who perverts his ways will become known" (Prov. 10:9). The godly, exercising wisdom, are successful, secure, and earn a good reputation, while the evil deeds of the ungodly will eventually be exposed.

Paul also advised church leaders in particular, and believers as a whole, to show themselves "to be a pattern of good works; in doctrine showing integrity, reverence, incorruptibility" (Tit. 2:7). True success is inextricably connected with integrity, reverence, and incorruptibility, and these, in turn, derive from a living relationship with the One who provides true success.[6]

True Success



Evangelist and author Joseph Prince relates the famous success story of the biblical patriarch Joseph, who had been sold into slavery at age 17, then was wrongly imprisoned until he was thirty years old. We know that Joseph was eventually elevated to the powerful position of Prime Minister of Egypt, yet God called Joseph successful long before his abrupt promotion, while he was yet in slavery: "The LORD was with Joseph, and he was a successful man; and he was in the house of his master the Egyptian" (Gen. 39:2).

Prince concludes, "It is the presence of the Lord in your life that makes you a success!"[7] Prince elaborates for those who may be skeptical, "From Genesis 39:2, it is clear that success is not **what** you have but rather **who** you have!"[8] In our materialistic culture, Prince's words prick our consciences: "It is not what you have. It is who you have that makes the difference."[9] In knowing Jesus, the Prince of Peace, we receive un-surpassing peace, which Prince describes for us:

---

5 The psalmist noted, "For he sees wise men die; likewise the fool and the senseless person perish, and leave their wealth to others" (Psalm 49:10).

6 See Tommy Nelson, *The 12 Essentials of Godly Success: Biblical Steps to a Life Well Lived*, B&H Books, 2005. One website presents "*12 Steps to Godly Success*" (http://www.buildingchurchleaders.com/articles/2005/033005.html): 1) Know the power of the present moment; 2) choose a powerful attitude, 3) Be responsible for how you perceive people and events; 4) Seek the value in people and events; 5) Be responsible for how your words and actions impact others; 6) Serve a higher purpose; 7) Act in accordance with your deeply held beliefs; 8) Accept who and what is, without wishing they were any other way; 9) Be loving and forgiving; 10) Be thankful; 11) Remember – any outcome is possible; 12) Serve others well. Another website offers a more simplified list, "*Six Steps to Godly Success*" (http://www.guideposts.org/bible-resources/six-steps-godly-success): 1) Put God first; 2) Go for the goals; 3) Dream big; 4) Stick with it; 5) Motivate yourself; 6) Gather good support.

7 Joseph Prince, *Unmerited Favor: Your supernatural advantage for a successful life*, Charisma House, 2010, pg. 3.

8 *Ibid*.

9 *Ibid*., pg. 17.

> The Hebrew Lexicon describes "shalom" as **completeness, safety, soundness (in body), welfare, health, prosperity, peace, quiet, tranquility, contentment, peace used of human relationships, peace with God especially in covenant relationship and peace from war**.[10]

Sounds pretty good to me. The world hungers and thirsts for what it cannot obtain apart from God. Many people have learned the hard way that money, possessions, prestige, position, and power cannot bring the peace described by "shalom" – "the peace of God, which surpasses all understanding, will guard your hearts and minds through Christ Jesus" (Phil. 4:7). Yes, through "Christ Jesus," the Prince of Peace (Is. 9:6), we receive un-surpassing peace.

Pastor Prince echoed the words of Jesus, who warned those seeking to gain the world that they could lose their souls, that material gain (fame, fortune, glory) could equate to a *failure* in live (and the things that truly matter in this life and the next). Prince wrote, "But, my friend, having financial success alone does not equate to good success…. Beloved, being a public success but a private failure is not good success at all!"[11] Imagine that! How many of those who glory in themselves and their accomplishments are recognized public successes but really *private failures*?

There are many motivational gurus out there with a multitude of multi-step programs designed to achieve success. These programs often promote principles and paradigms which have merit. But regardless of what these teachers might say, success is not as easy as pushing a button.

Moreover, absent a larger purpose, one connected with deeper spiritual realities, any success achieved will be either fleeting or unfulfilling. Rather, success is simplified and expanded by responding to the prompting of the Holy Spirit as we walk by faith with Christ.

Edge of Glory

Lady Gaga's smash hit song, *Edge of Glory*, is surely a product of our time and our culture. Glory! Lady Gaga sings of GLORY! Let's step back and look at her lyrics in the context of the flamboyant singer and the sexualized video of her song. The *Edge of Glory* is a stirring song about illicit sex, with the edge of glory being, what, orgasm?

Gaga is "on the edge" (few would dispute that), "hanging on a moment of truth" (what truth?), "a moment with you" (the one she is "on the edge with"). Amazingly, Gaga sings of "dancing in the flames" and states "it isn't hell if everybody knows my name tonight." Fleeting glory and fame are worth an eternity in hell?

In this short, snappy song, Gaga redefined "glory," "truth," and "hell." In her lexicon, *glory* is something prurient, not pure, something momentary, not transcendent. Similarly, *truth* is left undefined, yet subjective, pertaining to the particular moment of the sexual escapade. And *hell* becomes something which can be ameliorated (even escaped) by one's notoriety, as if the pleasures of glorious sex and of infamous notoriety could compensate for the horrors of hell.

---

[10] *Ibid*., pg. 88 [**emphasis** in the original].
[11] *Ibid*., pg. 197.

As we shall see, true believers are continually on the edge of a sublime glory Lady Gaga cannot comprehend,[12] a sublime glory provided by a loving God to His believing children.

Giving Glory to the Already Glorious God

Historically and biblically, God's people have always recognized that God's word speaks to God's purpose in creating man: to give glory to God. The apostolic church understood that truth, as has the church throughout the ages.[13]

The prophet Isaiah wrote, "Everyone who is called by My name, whom I have created for My glory; I have formed him, yes, I have made him" (Is. 43:7). That theme is continued in the New Testament by the apostles Peter and Paul.

In Peter's first epistle we read:

> If anyone speaks, let him speak as the oracles of God. If anyone ministers, let him do it as with the ability which God supplies, **that in all things God may be glorified** through Jesus Christ, to whom belong the glory and the dominion forever and ever. Amen. (1st Pet. 4:11)

In his second epistle to the church at Thessalonica, Paul exhorted that congregation just as he exhorts us today:

> Therefore we also pray always for you that our God would count you worthy of this calling, and fulfill all the good pleasure of His goodness and the work of faith with power, **that the name of our Lord Jesus Christ may be glorified in you**, and you in Him, according to the grace of our God and the Lord Jesus Christ. (2nd Thess. 1:11-12)

Paul similarly urged the Corinthian church to "therefore **glorify God in your body and in your spirit**" (1st Cor. 6:20) and "whether you eat or drink, or whatever you do, **do all to the glory of God**." (1st Cor. 10:31). Time after time, in verse after verse, in situation after situation, the ultimate object of the glory is … God!

Intrinsic vs. Shared Glory

God says that He is a jealous God who will not share His glory with another. We read in Isaiah, "For My own sake, for My own sake, I will do it; for how should My name be profaned? And I will not give My glory to another" (Is. 48:11). Here, God is referring to His essential, *intrinsic* glory. There is none like Him. He is unique and will not allow anything or

---

[12] Let's look at Lady Gaga's words from a *spiritual* perspective: edge of glory … moment of truth. Consider Truth with a capital T – Jesus Christ. When we have a personal encounter with our Savior – who is the Truth – in that moment of truth we are on the edge of Glory with a capital G.

[13] One excellent examples comes from Puritan preacher Thomas Watson (1620-1686), "Man's Chief End is to Glorify God," http://www.puritansermons.com/watson/watson5.htm.

anyone to be elevated above Him. And why should He? His ways and His thoughts are far above that of everything He has created.

Yet God is gracious beyond measure and He desires and wills to share Himself (His glory) with His adopted children. Here, God doesn't share His deity with others, but He does give generously of Himself in an intimate relationship with those whom He has adopted as His children – those who call Him Abba, Father (a term of familiarity and intimacy).

Jesus expressed this sublime truth in His prayer on the night of His betrayal and arrest, with these words: "And the glory which You gave Me I have given them, that they may be one just as We are one: I in them, and You in Me; that they may be made perfect in one, and that the world may know that You have sent Me, and have loved them as You have loved Me" (Jn. 17:22-23).

Paul explained it further, revealing in clear terms the mystery of what it means to be born again: "the mystery which has been hidden from ages and from generations, but now has been revealed to His saints. To them God willed to make known what are the riches of the glory of this mystery among the Gentiles: which is Christ in you, the hope of glory" (Col. 1:26-27).

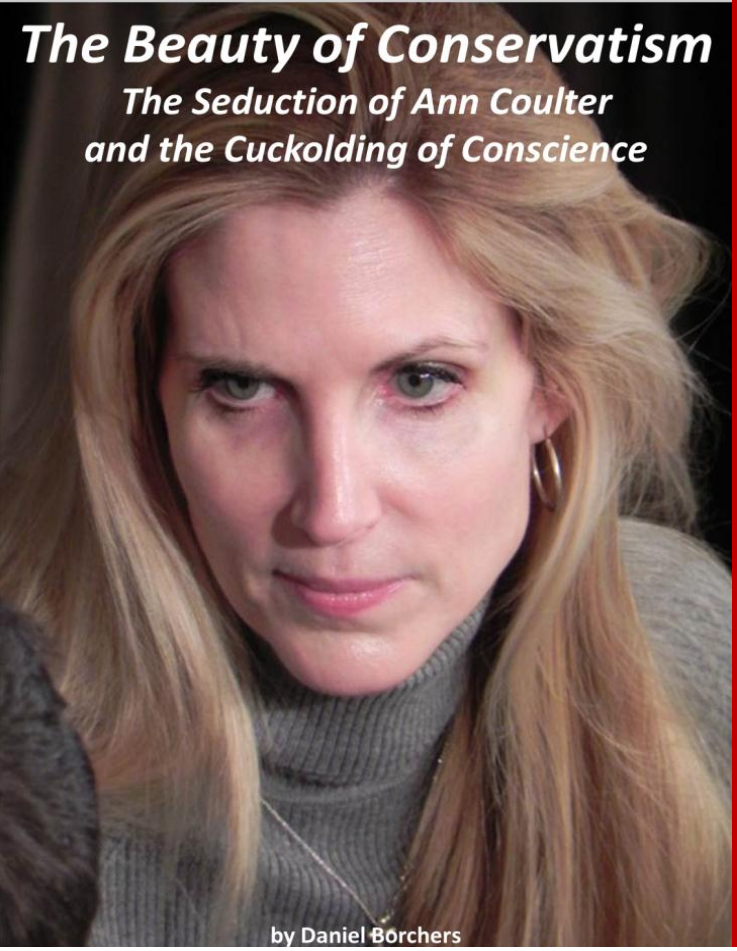
Ironically, many of those seeking self-fulfillment by heaping glory upon themselves in effect both deny the glory owed to God and deny themselves the fulfillment they seek which can only be found in Him.

God's glory is revealed in and through His children. That glory is *His*, not theirs. Our God lets us reflect and project *His* glory that He might share it with others. Successful narcissists tend to take pride in and boast of their own glory when it is God who deserves the credit for anything good that they have accomplished.

Throughout the gospels, Jesus demonstrates that He is the only way to salvation and teaches there are two groups of people in the world: those who accept His salvation and those who don't; the saved and the lost; the godly and the ungodly. The prophet Hosea warned of impending calamity to those who gloried in themselves: "The more they increased, the more they sinned against Me; I will change their glory into shame" (Hos. 4:7). Consider that carefully: everything we glory in ourselves and boast of will be turned to shame. But the apostle Paul took the opposite approach, declaring, "Therefore I glory in Christ Jesus in my service to God" (Rom. 15:17).

The world's notion of success, a notion typical of human beings, frequently consists of pleasure, possessions, position, power, and prestige – irrespective of the character and integrity needed to properly pursue and use those items, thus creating a public, yet false, sense of success – *a false success making a private failure*. Prince concludes, as do I, with this observation: "On the other hand, God's kind of success is complete, whole and permeates into every facet of our lives – spirit, soul and body."[14]

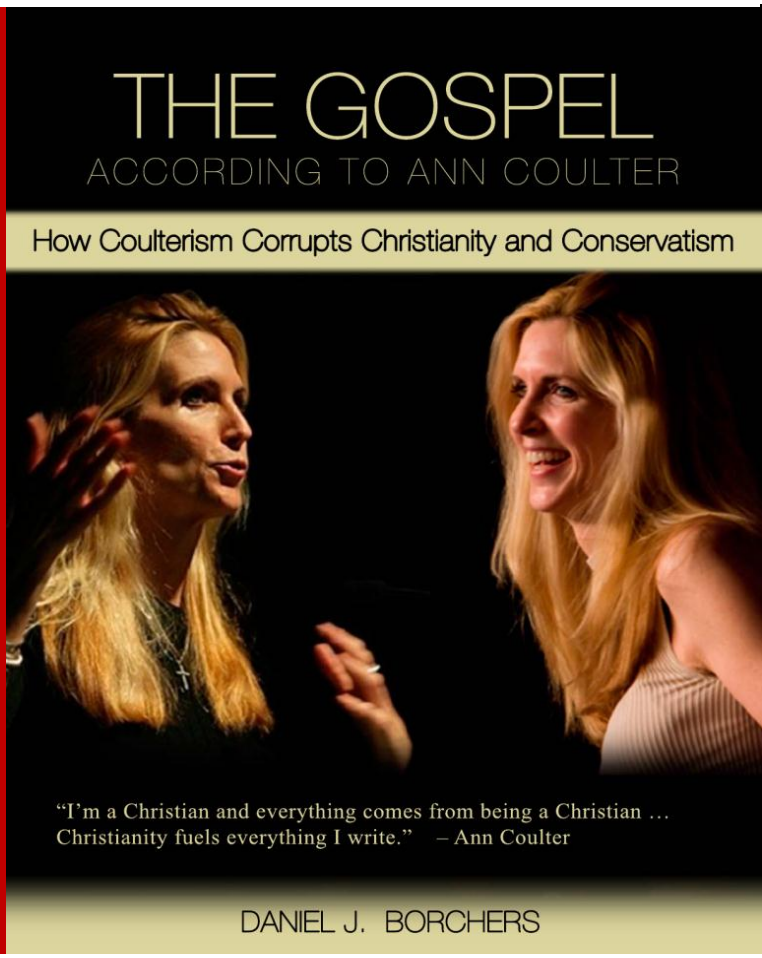
[14] Joseph Prince, *Unmerited Favor: Your supernatural advantage for a successful life*, Charisma House, 2010, pg. 214.



The Beauty of Conservatism examines the merits of Coulter's self-identity as possessing beauty, intelligence, and courage. The Conservative Movement has myopically accepted her self-promotion as the epitome of Conservatism – effectively defining Conservatism down – even as it champions a hypocrite who engages in the politics of personal destruction with lies, hate speech, and elimination rhetoric.

www.CoulterWatch.com/beauty.pdf

The Gospel According to Ann Coulter examines the roots and fruit of Coulter's unique syncretic blend of theology and ideology and its consequences for Conservatism and Christianity. Coulter's self-identity as a model Christian and quintessential conservative is at odds with the teachings of Christ and the apostolic church, distorts the image of Christians and their Creator, and emboldens saints to become sinners.



www.CoulterWatch.com/gospel.pdf